THE SOTERIOLOGY OF JAMES
IN LIGHT OF EARLIER JEWISH WISDOM LITERATURE
AND THE GOSPEL OF MATTHEW

By

Mariam J. Kamell

A Thesis Submitted in Completion of the Requirements for the Degree
Doctor of Philosophy in Divinity
April 2010

St Mary’s College
University of St Andrew
DECLARATION

I, Mariam Kamell, hereby certify that this thesis, which is approximately 88,000 words in length, has been written by me, that it is the record of work carried out by me and that it has not been submitted in any previous application for a higher degree.

I was admitted as a research student in September 2005, and as a candidate for the degree of PhD in April 2006; the higher study for which this is a record was carried out in the University of St Andrews between 2005 and 2010.
Date …………. Signature of candidate ……………………………………….

I hereby certify that the candidate has fulfilled the conditions of the Resolution and Regulations appropriate for the degree of PhD in the University of St Andrews and that the candidate is qualified to submit this thesis in application for that degree.
Date …………….. Signature of supervisor ……………………………………

In submitting this thesis to the University of St Andrews we understand that we are giving permission for it to be made available for use in accordance with the regulations of the University Library for the time being in force, subject to any copyright vested in the work not being affected thereby. We also understand that the title and the abstract will be published, and that a copy of the work may be made and supplied to any bona fide library or research worker, that my thesis will be electronically accessible for personal or research use unless exempt by award of an embargo as requested below, and that the library has the right to migrate my thesis into new electronic forms as required to ensure continued access to the thesis. We have obtained any third-party copyright permissions that may be required in order to allow such access and migration, or have requested the appropriate embargo below.

The following is an agreed request by candidate and supervisor regarding the electronic publication of this thesis:

Access to Printed copy and electronic publication of thesis through the University of St Andrews.

Date……….. Signature of candidate………………. Signature of supervisor………..
The epistle of James has been neglected in NT studies, caught between its relationship with Paul and the claim that it has no theology. Even as it experiences a resurgence of study, surprisingly no full-length survey exists on James as the epistle of “faith and works.” Approaches to James have neglected its soteriology and, in consequence, its theological themes have been separated or studied only in connection with Paul. As “moral character,” however, “faith” and “works” fit within a coherent theology of God’s mercy and judgment.

This study provides a sustained reading of James as a Jewish-Christian document. Because James presents the “faith” and “works” discussion in context of “can such faith save?” (2:14), the issue becomes one of soteriology and final judgment. Both the “law of freedom” and the “word of truth” demand faithful obedience—the “works.” Moreover, God’s character and deeds in election form the basis for human “works” of mercy and humble obedience, while future judgment is in accordance with virtuous character.

It has been established that James shares methodology and concerns with prior wisdom literature. This thesis therefore examines key ideas developing across the Jewish literature and Jesus’ teaching as presented by Matthew, and highlights developing views of God saving and judging his people. Within the first two chapters, James gives a high view of God’s work in calling and redeeming, providing wisdom to his people, and instilling the long-anticipated new covenant that they might live in obedience, humility and purity in accordance with his character and will. Because of God’s saving work, he justly judges those who fail to live mercifully, while his mercy triumphs for those who obey. God begins the work and sustains those who ask; but only those who submit to the “perfect law of freedom,” whose faith works, receive mercy when God enacts his final justice.
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I will always be grateful to my academic mentors. Dr. Barnes, your words of encouragement after a difficult undergrad thesis experience have never left my ears. Dr. Neumann, you taught me that the languages were to be enjoyed and that the academic life is a privileged life. Dr. Blomberg, you opened doors and allowed me the experience of co-authorship, made introductions, and did everything you could to encourage me onward. Prof. Bauckham, you took me sight unseen, believed in my project, and even expressed curiosity to discover my results—the highest complement you could have paid. And Dr. Macaskill, taking a half-formed thesis in the middle of major restructuring and a student in the midst of a life-crisis was not an easy task, but you did it ungrudgingly.

Other people in St Andrews made the last four years the experience it has been. St Mary’s friends: office-mates Ivan, Andrew, Phil, Paul, and Narges; prayer-group Gisela, Amber, and Julie; others walking life with me, Kathleen, Emily, Dimali. The St Mary’s ladies, Susan, Margot, and Debbie, for helping me with forms, deadlines, and stories—thank you! Colin and Linda, you made St Mary’s library a destination in itself. David and Katriona, you opened your home as a place both to work and retreat. Verena, I do not deserve as good a flatmate and friend as you have shown yourself to be the last two years: the laughter, tears, adventures and rapeseed field hijinks have made you a sister. And Nina and Vicki, you two have become so much more than co-workers becoming life-long friends of a rare sort. Stephanie, a friend longer than any, your faithfulness is a gift.

I would never be here without the support of my entire family. Lisa, Andrew, and Sonya, I love you all and am the luckiest youngest sibling out there. Aunt RoseLee, you have patiently read and edited endless papers and chapters: every student should be lucky enough to have an English professor in the family! Any grammar mistakes remaining are entirely my own. Mom, you made this entire educational extravaganza possible. You have supported me financially, emotionally, and spiritually, you have set a beautiful example of marital fidelity and love despite the dominance of the “in sickness” part for 24 years, and you have always pushed me beyond my comfort zones and challenged any complacency on my part. I am at this point largely because you made it feasible and wouldn’t let me settle for giving less than my all.

Ultimately, there is one person who is not here to see this, but who—from the time I was little—always believed I could do anything I set out to do. Without my father’s unconditional support for me, his unflinching endurance through years of illness and decline, his unflagging devotion to God, and even his encouragement to move overseas despite his lessening health, I would never have had either the courage or confidence to tackle this. Although it grieves me beyond words that he is not here to see the culmination of a lifetime’s support, I know he saw it in his mind and never doubted its fulfilment. I never imagined finishing this without his presence, and that makes this moment very bittersweet. My father was a model of faithfulness, love, and uncomplaining endurance that I will carry with me through all of life. Truly, Dad, you stood the test and won the crown of life from the Lord you loved, and this thesis is dedicated in your memory.
DEDICATED

TO THE MEMORY OF
MY FATHER

WILLIAM MICHAEL KAMELL
2 April 1945 – 16 October 2008
A Man of True Faith

Μακάριος ἄνηρ ὁς ύπομένει πειρασμόν,
ὅτι δόκιμος γενόμενος λήμψεται τὸν στέφανον τῆς ζωῆς ὃν ἔπηγγείλατο
τοῖς ἀγαπώσαν αὐτὸν
James 1:12
# Table of Contents

**Introduction** ................................................. 1  
A. Statement of Purpose 1  
B. Literature Survey 3  
C. Methodology 8  
   1. Clearing the Ground 8  
   2. Comparative Genre 9  
   3. Comparative Texts 10  
   4. Comparative Terms 13

**Chapter 1: Wisdom Backgrounds** ................................. 17  
General Introduction 17  
A. Proverbs 17  
   1. The Word and the Law 18  
   2. Faith and Works 21  
   3. Judgment and Mercy 26  
B. Sirach 29  
   1. The Word and the Law 30  
   2. Faith and Works 32  
   3. Judgment and Mercy 37  
C. Wisdom of Solomon 42  
   1. The Word and the Law 43  
   2. Faith and Works 45  
   3. Judgment and Mercy 48  
D. 4QInstruction 52  
   1. The Word and the Law 53  
   2. Faith and Works 54  
   3. Judgment and Mercy 57  
E. Other Wisdom: Epistle of Enoch, Pseudo-Phocylides, 4 Maccabees 60  
   1. The Word and the Law 62  
   2. Faith and Works 67  
   3. Judgment and Mercy 72  
Preliminary Conclusions 78

**Chapter 2: The Sayings of Jesus According to Matthew** ........... 81  
General Introduction 81  
A. Methodology 81  
B. Matthew’s Use of the Themes 85  
   1. The Word and the Law 85  
      a. General survey 85  
      b. The New Moses and the New Yoke: Matthew 1:4 and 11:19, 28-30 86  
      d. Conclusions 91
2. Faith and Works
   a. General survey
   b. Faith in Jesus’ Authority to Heal: Matthew 8-9
   d. Conclusions
3. Judgment and Mercy
   a. General survey
   b. Mercy, not Sacrifice: Matthew 9:13 and 12:7
   c. Judgment based on one’s speech: Matthew 12:36-37
   e. Conclusions

C. Closer Readings
   1. Sermon on the Mount: Matthew 5-7
      a. The Beatitudes: Matthew 5:3-12
      b. Fulfiling the Law and the “Antitheses”: Matthew 5:17-48
      d. First Warnings of Judgment: Matthew 7:15-28
   2. The Parable of the Unmerciful Servant: Matthew 18:21-35

Preliminary Conclusions

Chapter 3: The Theology is Presented in James 1-2

General Introduction
A. James 1
   1. The Nature of God and the Wisdom of Trials: James 1:1-8
   2. Humility versus Humiliation: James 1:9-11
   3. The Two Ways of Obedience and Desire: James 1:12-21
B. James 2
   2. Life in the Law of Liberty: James 2:8-13
      a. The νομός βασιλικός: James 2:8
      b. Judgment υπό τοῦ νομού: James 2:9-11
      c. The Triumph of Mercy: James 2:12-13
         i. Judgment by the Law of Freedom: 2:12
         ii. The Lex Talionis of Judgment Without Mercy: 2:13a
         iii. Mercy Triumphant: 2:13b
   3. The Faith that Works: James 2:14-26
      a. The Argument for a Faith with Works: James 2:14-19
      b. The Exemplars of This Faith: James 2:20-26

Preliminary Conclusions

Chapter 4: Broadening the Picture in James 3-5

General Introduction
A. The Word and Judgment
B. Faith and Prayer
C. Purity from the Κόσμος

Preliminary Conclusions
## Conclusion

### General Conclusions and Cautions

### Summary of the Themes

1. The λόγος and the νόμος
2. Faith and Works
3. Judgment and Mercy

### Concluding James’ Soteriology

## Bibliography
**INTRODUCTION**

**A. STATEMENT OF PURPOSE**

Within the last twenty years the epistle of James has undergone a significant increase in attention within the academy. Whereas earlier, nearly the only full-length publications on James were commentaries within series, the epistle now garners consideration as the subject of theses and book studies. Problematically, much of this attention has come through either the lens of inherited Pauline problems or the confines of atomistic questions. When James is read with a priority on Paul’s faith through grace, the epistle is forced to jump through a variety of interpretive hoops before being found to contradict or agree with Paul.\(^1\) In contrast, when scholars focus strictly on historical-critical questions, the text’s coherence and message is lost in a forest of technicalities. Niebuhr has, therefore, called for a “New Perspective” on James: “Wie bei der ,new perspective on Paul’ so führen auch bei der neuen Sicht auf Jakobus verschiedene Blickwinkel und Beleuchtungen zur genaueren Wahrnehmung eines Gesamtbildes mit Vorder- und Hintergrund, scharfen Konturen und weniger klaren Strukturen, Farbtupfern und Grauzonen.”\(^2\) The purpose of this thesis is to place James within a literary context that illumines how the text uses a variety of key terms in order to draw conclusions about a Jacobean theology of salvation.

This thesis seeks to bring James’ unique voice into the biblical-theological dialogue in regard to soteriology. Surprisingly little writing outside of articles has focused on the connection between faith and works particularly in relation to salvation, an issue at the

---

\(^1\) Cf. Richard Bauckham, *James: Wisdom of James, Disciple of Jesus the Sage* (London: Routledge, 1999), 113, who observes “James has so often been read from a Pauline perspective, i.e., a perspective which gives the Pauline letters priority over the other collection of letters in the New Testament, the seven so-called ‘catholic’ letters, among which James usually appears first. This Pauline perspective on James goes back to a very early date. The fact that James was one of the slowest of the New Testament works to gain general acceptance as canonical probably had much to do with the fact that in 2:14-26 James appears to flatly contradict Paul’s doctrine of justification by faith.”

forefront of NT studies. Because of a general tendency to give priority to the Pauline teaching regarding justification and salvation, the epistle of James has suffered indignities ranging from neglect to outright misinterpretation, particularly following Luther's dismissal of it as a non-apostolic work. Recent works continue to struggle to deal with James outside of an apologetic for his agreement with Paul. Even if one maintains a commitment to canonical unity, if that unity is held to the detriment of varied voices within the canon and to the creation of a “canon-within-a-canon,” then we must question whether the conclusions to which these commitments have led are valid.

This thesis therefore seeks James' unique contribution in a shifting landscape of NT studies regarding the nature of covenant and grace. It strives to understand how James, as a wisdom text following the teachings of Jesus, instructed its hearers in a godly life that God will approve at the final judgment. As Richard Bauckham and others have argued, James is an example of NT wisdom and as such employs language and grammar within the epistle that reveal its dependence upon both earlier wisdom literature and the teachings of Jesus, particularly those encapsulated in the Sermon on the Mount. James scholars have historically engaged with James using a paradigm of Judaism derived from Pauline scholarship, but for the purposes of this thesis the Pauline question belongs to the

---


4 See, in contrast, the solution of Patrick J. Hartin, A Spirituality of Perfection: Faith in Action in the Letter of James (Collegeville, Minn.: Liturgical Press, 1999), 3, that James does not have to be “an embarrassment to the hegemony of Pauline Christianity,” but “becomes a marvelous representative of another branch of early Christianity.” This seems to be the other answer to the “problem” of James, wherein it simply represents a different branch of Christianity that developed alongside Paul’s—but eventually “lost.”

5 Brevard S. Childs, The New Testament as Canon: An Introduction (London: SCM Press, 1984), 438, warns that, canonically speaking, “the problem does not turn merely on an original intentionality of each author who may or may not have been aware of the other witness, but on their function within a canonical collection for the Christian who accepts both writings as authoritative scripture,” adding that “the scriptural norm of the church is the canonically shaped witness and not an original historical setting” (442). He also adds, however, “both witnesses function normatively within sacred scripture and thus neither can be denied an individual integrity” and calls for interpretations which

6 “Soteriology” in this thesis refers to what is needed to receive a positive outcome from God’s judgment and subsequent life, whether earthly life as in the early literature or eternal life later.

larger conversations about how Judaism functions—and how Christianity functions within Judaism—particularly views of God’s initial grace and the community’s covenantal responsibility.

The epistle of James concerns itself with the relationship between the conduct of believers and their salvation. This thesis therefore explores how the author of James understood the outworking of eschatological salvation with wisdom literature as the background. Ultimately, it seeks to contribute to the paradigms that dominate NT studies on the process of salvation and its covenantal and character aspects.

B. LITERATURE SURVEY

It is remarkable that no full-length English language study on faith and works, much less on God’s judgment and mercy, in James exists. A great number of articles compare Paul and James on justification or attempt to unravel James’ doctrine from 2:14-26—with Paul more or less explicitly as the dialogue partner. In a classic study, Via concludes that “theology should proceed as a dialogue among perspectives . . . [j] must not one finally choose between Paul and James?” While this traditional position toward James has been given less emphasis in recent years, scholars still posit an argument

---


between the authors. Whether Paul and James disagreed, however, matters less than properly understanding James on his own, not on Pauline, terms.

The question regarding James’ relationship with Jesus’ teaching also poses a difficult question for interpreters. For instance, Deppe’s *The Sayings of Jesus in the Epistle of James* and Hartin’s *James and the Q Sayings of Jesus* have both impacted scholarly discussion regarding the relationship of James to Jesus’ teaching. Although Deppe limits the number of conscious parallels and argues that James omits any Christology, his work has helped to refine what scholars evaluate as quotation and allusion. Hartin’s volume helped remove the quest for exact citation even as he situated the epistle of James in relation to the early gospel traditions—if with a preference for Q. Bauckham’s study into the wisdom of James opened a new way of understanding the so-called allusions, presenting the comparison with Sirach and Proverbs as the base for understanding how James used the Jesus tradition. Though the discussion continues, a consensus is developing that James transmits the Jesus tradition, whether through quotation of early material or a reformulation of it.

---

11 M. H. Shepperd, “The Epistle of James and the Gospel of Matthew,” *JBL* 75 (1956), 40-51, for example, early on admits that “the reflection in James of the gospel Beatitudes . . . show closer affinities with the Lukan than with the Matthean form” (43), but concludes that the epistle “was composed in a Church where Matthew, and Matthew alone, was accepted as the Gospel” (49). See Alicia Batten, *What Are They Saying About the Letter of James* (New York: Paulist Press, 2009), 72-83, who gives this topic its own chapter in her survey.
14 Bauckham, *James*.
Similarly, growing interest can be seen in what James has to say about wealth and the believer’s relation to it. This theme has, unsurprisingly, been picked up with greater frequency in a two-thirds world, liberation context. For instance, Maynard-Reid’s *Poverty and Wealth in James* asserts that for James “the rich are outside the sphere of salvation and faith” and that to argue otherwise is simply “to placate the wealthy Christians within our own contemporary communities.” Likewise Elsa Tamez’ *The Scandalous Message of James* resists an “interception” of James that does not take seriously the eschatological necessity of caring for the poor, the requirement of a faith that works and is not at home with wealth. This challenge from two-thirds world authors has sparked dialogue; Friesen explores early Christian views of poverty as either “Injustice or God’s Will”; Edgar investigates the social context of the original audience; and Felder examines the issue from a wisdom/legal perspective to conclude that James is a strongly Jewish-Christian document.

Alongside the theme of social justice highlighted in James 1:27, the other ethical cruxes of speech ethics (1:26) and moral purity (1:27) have also received attention. For instance, Baker’s *Personal Speech-Ethics in the Epistle of James* repeatedly sweeps through a catalogue of literary backgrounds “to compile, as much as is reasonably possible, all the available ideas which could have been known by the author of the Epistle of James and

---

16 Batten, *What Are They Saying*, 64, surveying the key topics in modern Jacobean scholarship, notes “James contains some of the strongest critique against wealth in the Christian Testament,” and notes the tie with apocalyptic studies, such as Patrick A. Tiller, “The Rich and Poor in James: An Apocalyptic Ethic,” in *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*, ed. Benjamin G. Wright, III, and Lawrence M. Wills (Atlanta: SBL, 2005), 169–79.

17 Pedrito U. Maynard-Reid, *Poverty and Wealth in James*, Reprint ed. (Eugene, Oregon: Wipf & Stock, 2004), 63; 44. He adds in an endnote, while calling Martin one who seeks “to placate the contemporary wealthy,” that “Martin is obviously engaging in eisegesis. . . . For James, it is not the ‘vast majority’ of the rich of his day who are condemned—it is all of them.”


which could have influenced his thoughts and assumptions regarding speech-ethics.”

Baker reveals the high priority the author has for speech-ethics, arguing for the author’s inherently Christian position even with James’ strong link with wisdom literature in this theme. The issue of moral purity within James has also received full-length attention with Lockett’s *Purity and Worldview in the Epistle of James.* Lockett warns that “purity is a necessary, yet not sufficient, condition in order to achieve perfection,” as “perfection and purity are distinct yet dynamically related concepts in James.” He seeks to build a taxonomy to understand purity in James in a greater depth than so-far explored, providing a coherent explanation for the identity of ὁ ΚΟΣΜΟΣ from which the readers were to separate themselves as the moral sphere, “the entire cultural value system.” His work provides an alternative to those who erroneously see James as encouraging a sectarian worldview.

It should be clear by this point that the studies of James tend to circle similar questions, but a full-length attempt to study its theology regarding the Christian life in

---

25 Ibid., 143-44.
relation to a doctrine of salvation, within a full wisdom and Christian context, has not been put forward. The closest would be Konradt’s *Christliche Existenz nach dem Jakobusbrief.* Konradt’s book arrives at some similar conclusions as this thesis, acknowledging the importance of the rebirth imagery in 1:18 and the consequent, inherent move towards obedience, concluding, “Die Annahme des Wortes besteht in Hören und Tun, wobei das Tun dem Gedanken der ‘Kraft’ des Wortes entsprechend als Folge, ja als integraler Bestandteil rechten Hörens erscheint.” Methodologically, however, he tends to use the background literature to support his exegesis rather than create the framework for the epistle’s thought. Likewise, even while concluding that “Im Gericht wird nicht die Quersumme aus guten und schlechten Taten gezogen, sondern ewiges Leben empfängt der, der am Ende im Bereich des ‘Lebens’ angetroffen wird,” he fails to ground this conclusion within James’ theology of judgment and mercy, a failure perhaps derived from underestimating the theological freight of these terms in the wisdom literature. Despite the overlapping of themes and conclusions regarding initial rebirth and subsequent new life, Konradt’s thesis also does not subsequently capture the importance of James 2:12-13 for final judgment.

---


31 Ibid., 304. Conversely, “Wer nicht zum Tun vordringt, hört vergeblich.”

32 Ibid., 310.
C. Methodology

1. Clearing the Ground

This thesis, therefore, seeks to fill what appears as a glaring lacuna regarding themes of faith, works, judgment and mercy within James’ own theological system. Several assumptions will have to be made for the sake of space. Issues of date and authorship are not relevant to this particular argument; for the sake of simplicity I assume an early date (mid-40s-early 50s) for the composition. Likewise, I refer to “James” as the author the text claims, assumedly the James related to Jesus as half-brother or cousin. These assumptions are both argued widely elsewhere and not directly relevant to the argument of the thesis. It does not seem essential to contend these points here.

Chapter one of this thesis begins with a survey of selected wisdom texts, which form the base for the later discussions. In each text examined, the key terms discussed below are investigated for that text’s distinctive contribution to a developing theology. Chapter two contains a close reading of Matthew, giving first an overview of his use of the key ideas, then several close textual studies. While using the same themes as in chapter one, Matthew will receive greater attention as a theological first-century setting of the life


34 Cf. Craig L. Blomberg and Mariam J. Kamell, Exegetical Commentary on the New Testament: James (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2008), 32-35; Brosend, James and Jude, 5; Moo, James, 22; Witherington, Letters and Homilies, 401; Bauckham, James, 16-21; J. B. Mayor, The Epistle of St. James, 2nd ed. (London: Macmillan, 1897), v, xvi. While Niebuhr, “New Perspective on James?,” 1030, acknowledges the intended referent of “James” as the brother of Jesus, he warns, “Solange sich eine überzeugende Motivation und eine geschichtlich plausible Funktion für die Wahl des Pseudonyms Jakobus’ nicht sowohl am Text als auch mit Blick auf die überlieferten frühchristlichen Quellen im Einzelnen nachweisen lässt, bleibt die Beweislast in der Verfasserfrage angesichts des eindeutigen Zeugnisses des Briefpräskripts m.E. bei den Bestreitern der Herkunft vom Herrenbruder (gegen Popkes 68).”

35 See the summary of current scholarship in Batten, What Are They Saying, 28-43.

36 J. H. Ropes, A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Epistle of St. James (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1916), 52, after a lengthy discussion of authorship, concludes: “For the significance of the Epistle of James in the history of early Christian thought it makes not much difference whether it was written by James the Lord’s brother about the year 60, or by another Palestinian teacher fifty years later.”
and sayings of Jesus, sayings which James also resets. The second half of the thesis focuses on James itself. Chapter three surveys chapters 1 and 2 of the epistle where most of its theology is found. It is argued there that James 2:12-13 form the crux of its soteriology. Finally, chapter four includes the last three chapters of James and the practical applications of the theology in James 1-2.

2. Comparative Genre

James has a well-established reputation as NT wisdom literature. In both grammatical form and style of argumentation, James is a wisdom text. As Witherington observes:

> While on the surface James appears beguilingly simple, it expects a lot of the audience in order to achieve full understanding. For example, this text presupposes the ability to pick up allusions to earlier sapiential material (some of it in the Septuagint, some of it from the teaching of Jesus), the ability to understand how sapiential material functions in deliberative rhetoric as part of argumentation by exhortation and the ability to make logical connections between remarks when one or another premise of an enthymeme is left out.

As the prime example of NT wisdom, James reveals dependence not only on the Septuagint wisdom writings but also on the teaching of Jesus, transforming and grounding them together in a new setting. James is not “simple” wisdom like Proverbs, however. Penner argues for reading James as an apocalyptic letter, dramatically focused on the eschaton. Likewise Jackson-McCabe, Tiller, and Hartin all view the boundary between wisdom and apocalyptic as blurring to varying degrees by the time the epistle was drafted. James clearly focuses on eschatological judgment, but since wisdom was heavily influenced

---

37 Jacob Neusner, “Sin, Repentance, Atonement and Resurrection: The Perspective of Rabbinic Theology on the Views of James 1-2 and Paul in Romans 3-4,” in The Missions of James, Peter, and Paul: Tensions in Early Christianity, ed. Bruce Chilton and Craig Evans (Leiden: Brill, 2005), 432, observes, “Both for James and for the Rabbinic sages, the matter of salvation by faith and works proves only tangential to the matter of atonement. It is not the focus of the doctrine of repentance, only an axiom built into that doctrine.”

38 Witherington, Letters and Homilies, 390.


40 Penner, James and Eschatology.

by apocalyptic eschatology by this time, that fact that does not supersede its wisdom status.

Certain common assumptions across wisdom texts make them fruitful for comparison with James. For one, they assume that they are written for an established community, a group already sharing a common worldview. These are intended to guide people in wise living, in how to benefit both themselves and the community. Theologically, basic teachings are assumed as already in place and therefore not necessary, for the shared background provides the common assumptions and allusive backdrop. Much can be gleaned, instead, from a brief allusion or word picture. Another key to wisdom texts is that they are intended for communities and not strictly for individuals, although they help to teach the individual’s place within the community. Although people succeed or fail on their own deeds, it also becomes clear that each person’s actions affect others so that how one interacts with these others reveals one’s state as wise or foolish, a part of the community or not. A third factor to consider is the major themes consistent across the texts: Wisdom is to be sought and studied and obeyed, the poor are to be helped, the wealthy are not to be arrogant, the foolish ignore and fail to apply—at their own peril—the teachings of wisdom, a careless tongue is a danger, idolatry in any form is strictly forbidden, and so on. All of these topics appear in James as well as in the earlier texts, thematically tying James into the wisdom tradition.

3. Comparative Texts

Using varied wisdom texts to build a framework for our discussion of James helps to remove James from its usual forced conversation with Pauline theology. The diversity

---

42 James L. Crenshaw, *Old Testament Wisdom: An Introduction*, Revised ed. (Louisville: WJK, 1998), 12, notes, “In some circles of the wise, the fear of Yahweh functioned as the compass point from which they took moral readings.” He later adds that “Wisdom addresses natural, human, and theological dimensions of reality, and constitutes an attitude toward life, a living tradition, and a literary corpus” (15).

43 This in answer to Luther’s complaint that James’ “purpose is to teach Christians, but in all this long teaching it does not once mention the Passion, the resurrection, or the Spirit of Christ. He names Christ several times; however he teaches nothing about him, but only speaks of general faith in God.” In Bachmann, ed., *Luther’s Works*, 396.

44 This becomes remarkably clear in texts such as 4QInstruction.
of texts reveals patterns around the key ideas in James, patterns that may illumine how the different terms are used in James. This comparison also helps to qualify preconceptions about the terms explored here, building new paradigms to bring into NT scholarship.

The three main wisdom texts at the center of tradition can also be seen to build on each other: Proverbs, Sirach, and the Wisdom of Solomon.\(^45\) These will gain the most detailed survey as they would almost certainly have been available to James, likely through the Septuagint, and would have influenced him as a wisdom teacher. Witherington observes that “the language [of James] is very Septuagintal: only thirteen words in James are not found in the Septuagint. . . . [T]hat it shows familiarity with the Septuagint and seems especially indebted to Sirach, Wisdom of Solomon and Proverbs is important for discerning the voice and character of this document.”\(^46\)

In addition to these texts four others are included: first the Qumran text 4QInstruction, followed by Pseudo-Phocylides, 4 Maccabees, and the Epistle of Enoch in conjunction. These texts, which may or may not have been available to James, show the development of wisdom thought in distinct ways up to the period in which the epistle was most likely authored. 4QInstruction provides us with an example from the Qumran literature, one that may well have had wider exposure than an explicitly sectarian piece. Although fragmentary, enough of the text survives to give us an example of Judean proto-sectarian wisdom instruction meant for community life and reflecting a wisdom piety from

---

\(^{45}\) These three texts have all been widely seen in the background of James. Others, such as Ecclesiastes and Job were initially considered for this study but were not ultimately helpful in drafting a trajectory of thought. The Wisdom Psalms likewise were not included, partly from a lack of consensus of which ones should be included. For example, James L. Crenshaw, *The Psalms: An Introduction* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 2001), 94, questions “the very category,” Roland Murphy, “A Consideration of the Classification ‘Wisdom Psalms’,” in *Vetus Testamentum Supplement* (Leiden: Brill, 1963), 156-67, chooses seven, and R. N. Whybray, “The Wisdom Psalms,” in *Wisdom in Ancient Israel*, ed. John Day, Robert Gordon and H.G.M. Williamson (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1995), 158, offers a potential 16. For the sake of space and focus the three main biblical/apocryphal texts with the closest relation to James have been chosen.

\(^{46}\) Witherington, *Letters and Homilies*, 388.
a period shortly before our main text. Pseudo-Phocylides attempts to pass for Greek wisdom, much like the Wisdom of Solomon, revealing the logic and beauty of what is inherently Jewish thought. Fourth Maccabees, in contrast, is proudly Jewish within a Hellenized context, standing against any forms of idolatry or concession to the “world” that leads one away from wholehearted obedience to the Lord. And the Epistle of Enoch (chs. 91-107 [92-105]) is the most apocalyptic of the wisdom texts, wisdom in its emphasis on righteousness and the two ways a person can choose, but overtly eschatological in its focus.

Finally, as noted above, there is a general consensus that James is heavily dependent upon the teaching of Jesus, arguably either from Matthew or Q. Whether the text of (or behind) Matthew stands behind James, this thesis will use Matthew’s final form to give one gospel a full interaction, while acknowledging parallels in the other synoptic gospels where relevant. Often scholars explore the *logia* of Jesus in isolation before applying their results to James, whereas the desire here is to see the progression of the overall theology in which the *logia* are framed, thus seeing one development of the gospel tradition alongside James. One question here concerns how Jesus’ teaching shapes or changes the tradition thus far explored.

---

47 Whereas Robert Eisenman, *James the Brother of Jesus: The Key to Unlocking the Secrets of Early Christianity and the Dead Sea Scrolls* (New York: Penguin, 1997), creates an idiosyncratic reading of James as the Essene Teacher of Righteousness, few others see any strong links between the two communities.

48 Lockett, *Purity and Worldview*, 101, notes that “The examples of Sirach and Pseudo-Phocylides prove particularly interesting comparisons with James.” The latter text, much like James, begins with a prologue and summary (vv. 3–8), which “functions to set forth the principles and presuppositions of the work as a whole and in turn anticipates the expansion of these themes in the rest of the work.”


50 George W. E. Nickelsburg, and James C. VanderKam, *1 Enoch: A New Translation* (Minneapolis: Fortress, 2004), 10, calls this “testamentary instruction,” in which the author’s “idiom is that of the two ways, typical of biblical and post-biblical wisdom literature.” He describes the main section: “A few verses of two-ways instruction (94:1-5) serve as a bridge to the main section of the epistle, which spells out (by condemnation) the way of wickedness followed by “the sinners” and encourages “the righteous” to be steadfast in the hope of vindication” (11). M. Reiser, *Jesus and Judgment: The Eschatological Proclamation in Its Jewish Context*, trans. L. M. Maloney (Minneapolis: Fortress, 1997), 63, estimates: “Enoch’s letter (92-105) . . . was probably composed about 100 B.C.E.”
Regarding the background literature, Chris VanLandingham’s *Judgment and Justification in Early Judaism and the Apostle Paul* argues for a much more literal judgment by works than is often presented in both Early Judaism and Pauline studies, concluding that, while initial (forensic) justification is by faith, the final judgment is based on works, and God acts in mercy and covenant with the “righteous,” never sinners.51 Meanwhile, a recent master’s thesis by Kerry Lewis52 concludes that for James works—at least works of charity—are commanded if one wishes to receive salvation in the end. He argues that James views faith and works as two separate entities that *together* bring about salvation, taking at face value the conclusion of James 2:26: as the body and spirit are separable but useless alone, so also faith and works are separable but useless when divided.53 Given the shifting nature of discussions about soteriology in Paul and NT studies more generally, this thesis seeks to develop a more robust picture of the soteriology of wisdom literature, Matthew, and ultimately James, in order to bring James into the conversation.

4. Comparative Terms

Out of close study of James, six key terms rose as crucial to understanding his theology of salvation and the shape of the Christian life. They are introduced in James 1-2 in pairs that interact and illumine each other, while in James 3-5 their uses are broadened. These are the *word* and *Law* (λόγος and νόμος), *faith* and *works* (πίστις and ἐργανήσεως), and *judgment* and *mercy* (κρίσις and ἔλεος). These six terms, oddly far more than the verb ἀποκάθαρθος, occupy the center of James’ discussion of the Christian life and the criteria for surviving the promised final judgment.

---

51 Chris VanLandingham, *Judgment & Justification in Early Judaism and the Apostle Paul* (Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson, 2006), 335. He concludes: “The Last Judgment will then determine whether a person, as an act of the will, has followed through with these benefits of Christ’s death. If so, eternal life will be the reward; if not, damnation.”


53 Ibid., 27-28; See also Lewis, “’A New Perspective on James 2:14-26’” (paper presented at ETS, Nov. 19 2008), 16-17.
The identity of the νόμος in James has sparked a great deal of scholarly discussion. The perceived disagreement between James and Paul, resulting in James’ dismissal by the scholarly community, has left any conversation about the law in James a defensive maneuver. So, for example, Davids argues:

Even if James assumed the value and validity of the law, he is not a legalist. He never argues that the essence of Christianity is anything other than a commitment to God in Christ or a reception of grace from God. The regeneration of the Christian comes through God’s action in his word (1:18). Salvation comes through the ‘implanted word’ which must be ‘received in meekness’ (1:21). God gives grace to the repentant (4:6). None of these sentiments is at all at variance with Paul.

Such discussions are concerned to show that James and Paul do not, in fact, disagree with each other in regard to the role of the law in the Christian life, with the burden of proof falling on James and not necessarily hearing his independent voice. James uses the terms λόγος and νόμος as the base for understanding how the believer ought to live; how, in effect, faith acts. To understand the “works” that James seeks from his audience, it seems wisest to start with the object of obedience. Both λόγος and νόμος are essential to this thesis, since we cannot know what James deems the right “works,” much less how one will be judged by the “law of freedom,” without clarifying what he means by the law.

James links the terms “law” and “word” together in a way that makes them nearly interchangeable. Λόγος appears in 1:18, 21, 22, and 23 and then, within the same pericope, seamlessly switches to νόμος in 1:25, which term then continues through the


55 Readily perceivable through surveying the indexes of NT ethics or theology books.

56 Davids, James, 50.
rest of the epistle. The words, therefore, must be investigated in tandem. It is not enough to state that James intends full Torah-obedience because he urges obedience to the νόμος; we must first undertake to understand what he intends by λόγος. Likewise, the two words are too closely linked in his text to simply say λόγος means “Gospel” and νόμος “Torah” and forgo consideration of how he uses them and modifies them into one unit. A clear understanding of both terms, then, forms the basis for subsequent argument on the criteria for future judgment and salvation.

The conjunction of faith and works is, of course, at the heart of at least Luther’s dislike of the epistle.57 The central claim, “faith without works is dead” (2:26), supported by the example of Abraham, who was justified not simply “by faith alone,” appears to contradict Paul in Romans or Galatians. Johnson argues, “James’ entire outlook is distinctive. He has a relational or, perhaps better, a covenantal perspective, in which the speech and actions of humans are fundamentally qualified by the speech and actions of the God who chose to be involved with humans.”58 Verbally, James 2:14-26 forms the crux of this discussion. Out of sixteen occurrences of πίστις in the epistle, eleven appear in this passage along with all three occurrences of πίστευω. Likewise, out of the 15 uses of ἐργον in the epistle, twelve occur in this passage. A preliminary understanding of the works of faith, however, and the nature of faith itself, ought to be sought from wisdom literature, and, even more importantly, from Jesus’ teaching. This background sets James within a strongly canonical tradition and confirms the necessity of hearing his unique contribution.

Finally, the themes of “judgment” and “mercy” are located at the center of James’ theology of final judgment. James 2:12-13 establish his understanding of God’s relationship to humanity. It becomes apparent that human actions both in judgment and in

57 As in Bachmann, ed., Luther’s Works, 396: “this James does nothing more than drive to the law and to its works.”
mercy affect how God responds, ultimately revealing God’s justice. In James, there are two main horizons for the quality of mercy—the present and the eschatological—and the two at times overlap. The former becomes apparent in how people are expected to act (caring for the poor, not cheating your workers, etc), while the latter often coincides with issues of salvation and judgment. Both Jesus and James use ἐλεος much as their Hebrew forebears did, as a legal term in the context of a covenantal requirement.\(^{59}\) Mercy is a function of justice,\(^{60}\) and within James, the legal and the gracious aspects of it are both brought to the fore. In the intersection of “judgment” and “mercy,” the call for faithful obedience to the word of truth comes to its fulfillment.

---


\(^{60}\) This is true in classical Greek as well as in the Jewish literature and NT (see Ibid., 478, 486).
CHAPTER 1: WISDOM BACKGROUNDS

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

“The starting point, content, and goal of Israel’s wisdom was ‘fear of the Lord’—the proper respect for and awe before God based on an accurate perception of who God is and who human beings are in the presence of God.” Harrington’s definition roots what can often be seen as a pragmatic genre into its theological grounding, for through the “fear of the Lord” theme, wisdom effortlessly equates ethics and covenant, character and theology. Proverbs 1-8 places the “fear of the Lord” at crucial moments (1:7, 29; 2:5; 3:7; 8:13) to contrast with various evil lifestyle choices, while 9:10 parallels it with knowing the Holy One (MT: מִלְחָמָה). Sirach resumes this theme in chapter 1, celebrating the fear of the Lord as the crown and root of wisdom (1:18, 20), even while issuing a warning very much like James 1:6-8 in Sirach 1:28: “Do not disobey the fear of the Lord; do not approach him with a divided mind (ἐν καρδία| δισσί|).” Wisdom literature contextualizes obedience in a covenant context such that the entirety of one’s life is worship.

In this chapter we will explore a variety of wisdom literature through the focus of the key terminology. The different literature, however, offers diverse emphases so, while all the themes will be examined for each book, the purpose will be two-fold: to build overall patterns while also to seek the individual emphases of the texts.

A. PROVERBS

Proverbs forms our base text as quintessential wisdom. Van Leeuwen calls Proverbs “the foundational wisdom book of the Bible. . . . [raising] the theological

---

62 Carole R. Fontaine, “Wisdom in Proverbs,” in In Search of Wisdom: Essays in Memory of John G. Gammie, ed. Leo G. Perdue, Bernard Brandon Scott and William Johnston Wiseman (Louisville: WJK, 1993), 112: “Not only is ‘fear of the Lord’ the proper relationship of creature to creator that orients all subsequent action and knowledge, but such fear is also the ‘beginning of wisdom’ ([Prov.] 1:7; 9:10; 15:33a). . . . While wisdom’s worldview does concern itself with a search for order in the world and human activities, wisdom is itself more than the voice of that order, and that order is both flexible and provisional. Wisdom’s world order can never be static, because neither Israel’s God nor its people are static. . . . All causation is negated when Israel’s God wills it so.”
question of the relation of ordinary life in the cosmos to God the creator.” Von Rad suggests a court setting for Proverbs, positing an inherent religious context even when the wisdom appears secular, for “there was never a question of what we would call absolute knowledge functioning independently of [the sage’s] faith in Yahweh. . . . The teachers were completely unaware of any reality not controlled by Yahweh.” Crenshaw concurs that God “spoke to [the sages] principally through their observations of the creation and of human behavior and their godly reflections, informed by faith, on what they saw.”

Crucially, Proverbs concerns itself with the two paths that a person chooses between: wisdom and folly. Crenshaw categorizes them as “two distinct groups of pilgrims,” wise and foolish, and “all people fell into one or the other category. In the view of sages, no middle ground existed for those who participated in folly, or in wisdom, only minimally. Moreover, an ethical undersanding of the two categories prevailed: The wise were righteous, and the fools wicked.” Wisdom was not a neutral category, but an ethical-theological statement of one’s loyalty to Israel’s God.

1. The Word and The Law

Λόγος appears fifty five times in the LXX of Proverbs, thirty of those translating the Hebrew term הָלֹא. The majority of the uses take the most basic meaning of both

---

63 Raymond C. Van Leeuwen, “Proverbs,” in Theological Interpretation of the Old Testament, ed. Kevin J. Vanhoozer (Grand Rapids: Baker Academic, 2008), 171. He later adds, “The attempt to deny the significance of the Wisdom literature for Christian theology (Preuss 186-90) has more to do with a fear of ‘natural theology’ and a focus on salvation history narrowly conceived than it does with a proper understanding of Proverbs and its role in the canon. . . . Christ’s insistence that he is ‘the way’ cannot be understood except against the background of Proverbs” (176-77). This argument allows for a particularly Christological reading of the two-ways texts when we arrive at the NT and other early Christian writings.


65 Ibid., 64.


67 Cornelis Bennema, “The Strands of Wisdom Tradition in Intertestamental Judaism: Origins, Developments and Characteristics,” Tyb 52 (2001), 65, sees Proverbs as an example of wisdom “under the influence of the prophetic tradition. . . . Wisdom is depicted as the source of right ethical behavior (see especially Pr. 1-9); acceptance or rejection of Wisdom and her teaching leads respectively to (long) life, peace and blessing or to death and disaster.”

68 Crenshaw, Old Testament Wisdom, 67, emphasis mine.
terms, referring simply to speech—wise or foolish—that reveals a person’s nature. In the prologue and in Wisdom’s speeches, however, several uses are more theologically loaded. The term νόμος, meanwhile, appears twelve times in the LXX of Proverbs, sometimes as a translation of אֲשֶׁר מַגִּיס (cf. 4:2; 13:14; 28:4, 7, 9x2; 29:18) and twice of אֲשֶׁר בָּשָׁל (6:20), although in 6:23 both Hebrew terms appear together as the “commands of the law.” Often it is paired with some verb of “keeping” or “guarding,” indicating the active nature of one’s relation to the law.

Several times, particularly in the introduction of the book, νόμος refers to the father/instructor’s “teaching,” as in 4:2 (cf. 6:20): “I give you good precepts: do not forsake my teaching (ὡς διδάσκων; νόμον).” In the very next verse, however, the author recalls his own teacher warning them to obey his words in the same sort of command: “Let your heart hold fast my words (ὡς λόγος); keep my commandments (ὡς ἐντολάς), and live (MT 4:4b; LXX 4:b-5a).” For the author, the link is readily made between “holding” the teachings and obedience. Obedience to this juncture of νόμος, λόγος, and ἐντολάς brings life (cf. 4:10). That the instruction is meant to be internalized (ὡς ἐν καρδίαν) is made clear here, shaping the very heart of the person (see again 4:21-23). Throughout Proverbs it becomes clear that character, not mere conformity to a set of rules, is in view.

---

69 Three of those are unparalleled in the MT: 3:16a, 9:10a and 13:15b. On the latter two, Johann Cook, “Law and Wisdom in the Dead Sea Scrolls with Reference to Hellenistic Judaism,” in Wisdom and Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls and in the Biblical Tradition, ed. F. García Martinez (Leuven: Leuven University Press, 2003), 332 argues, “these passages have an identical addition (to know the law is the sign of a sound mind) which is part of the systemic application of exegetical perspectives by the translator. . . . The translator namely warns the readers of the inherent ‘dangers’ of foreign wisdom (the Hellenism of the day). One of these prominent dangers was the devaluation of the law of Moses.”

70 R. N. Whybray, Proverbs (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1994), 102-3, observes a parallel with Deut. 6:6-8 and 11:18-19: “All three passages use similar though not entirely identical, imagery in enjoining unremitting attention and obedience to teaching just given or about to be given: parental teaching in the case of Proverbs and the Law of Moses in Deuteronomy. They all employ language in which the heart is the repository of the teaching . . . and they all stress that the teaching in question must be borne in the mind at all times . . . One may perhaps cautiously speak of a convergence of wisdom and Deuteronomistic teaching at this point.”

71 ἐντολή generally refers to specific commands, νόμος more broadly to the Law.
In the introduction, then, we see an easy alternation between νόμος and λόγος. Both terms refer to the sum total of Wisdom’s instructions, the way a person should live in order to be considered wise and righteous (cf. 6:23; 13:14). The equation also functions to elevate the importance of the teacher’s “words,” with obedience as imperative as to the divine law (cf. 5:773). Bullock claims, “It may not be an overstatement to say that one who keeps wisdom’s teachings also keeps the Torah,” adding that Proverbs is:

... more than an endorsement [of Torah], it is a digest of practical instructions on how to be God’s people, broken down into the ethical bites of wisdom theology, and applied microcosmically to the individual. In other words, Proverbs presents the moral urgency of wisdom in the language of Torah-keeping and thus highlights both the authority and the urgency of the moral life, which is the bottom line of Torah theology.73

While Bullock does overstate Proverbs’ focus on Torah, he does well to highlight the moral aspect of wisdom’s call to obedience. In Proverbs, obedience to the νόμος/λόγος shapes a person’s character into the godly shape of the wise person.

Toward the end of the book there are several uses of νόμος that seem to refer more traditionally to the Law as Torah. For example, 28:4 depicts a battle for influence between the wicked and righteous. Here the הָרְפָּא appears to refer to Israel’s Torah and not merely the teaching of the sage or Lady Wisdom.74 In an allusion to the commandment of obedience in children, 28:7 determines that those who “keep the law are wise children” versus those who shame their parents through gluttony. This allusion helps strengthen the conclusion that in Proverbs 28 the “law” refers to the Decalogue at least.75

Both the teacher and Lady Wisdom herself expect that the wise student will not only listen to their instructions but will—in taking them to heart—obey them. Their

---

72 This sentiment, μη ἁκύρως ποιηθῆς ἤμοις λόγος, bears remarkable likeness to James’ command in 1:22 that his readers be ποιηταὶ λόγου and not ἀκροαταὶ only.
73 C. Hassell Bullock, “Wisdom, The ‘Amen’ of Torah,” JETS 52 (2009), 13. He also makes several assumptions regarding the purpose of Torah.
74 Robert Banks, Jesus and the Law in the Synoptic Tradition (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1975), 26, calls this one of the “only possible references to the Mosaic Law” in Proverbs, including as other possibilities 6:23; 19:16; 28:4ff; 29:18.
75 Sir. 3:1-16—also expanding upon Exod. 20:12 and Deut. 5:16—indicates that this imperative of the Decalogue held special importance in the wisdom texts.
“words” are equated to commands and to instructions, but the precise identity of the content is not specified except the commands to guard one’s tongue and remain on the path of wisdom rather than straying into folly (e.g., 4:24-27). Ultimately, νόμος and λόγος in Proverbs do not refer to remarkably separate entities. While the rest of Proverbs gives the content of the “words” of the wisdom teachers and while obedience to “the law” is encouraged (e.g., 28:7, 9), Proverbs does not specifically allude to covenant laws like circumcision or do more than make brief mentions of sacrifice (15:8; 21:3, 27; each time concerned with the internal state of the person doing the sacrificing rather than the ritual). The words, commands, and instructions of Proverbs are intended to encourage obedience to the ways of God through the transformation of a person’s desires and heart.

2. Faith and Works

As a traditional wisdom text, Proverbs concerns itself with the proper behavior of the audience within the community setting. “Faith” in terms of “belief in God” never occurs: that idea is firmly encapsulated by the concept of the “fear of the Lord.” The “fear of the Lord” marks one as part of the community of the righteous, having the disposition to behave in a way pleasing to the Lord rather than driven by selfish motives. One might say that the “fear of the Lord” is Proverbs’ terminology for “belief” in God.

Regarding the common terminology of faith, ἀλήθεια appears 12 times, referring to truthful speech and faithful behavior nearly equally. The related πίστις appears four times (8:30; 13:17; 14:5; 20:6), the first relating to a craftsman and the last three to faithfulness. These terms are the most likely background for the NT πίστις terminology, as Lindsay

---

76 Fontaine, “Wisdom in Proverbs,” 111, posits Proverbs “reflects a difference in emphases and interests. It has been rightly noted that, in the absence of traditions about covenant and election, wisdom theology is creation theology, but this is not the only place in the Hebrew Bible where such theology is found.”

77 Weiser, TDNT 6:183, comments “A consideration of faith in the OT cannot overlook the astonishing fact that two basically different and even contradictory groups of meaning are used for man’s relation to God, namely, fear on the one side and trust on the other. . . . They were close, and even shaded into one another, so that the fear of God could often be quite simply an expression for faith.”

notes, “The πιστ- word group in the LXX consistently represents the Hebrew root יְשָׁי of the MT.”

79 Πιστίς appears seven times,80 twice as translations of יְשָׁי, and consistently refers to truthfulness and faithfulness. Πιστός, meanwhile, has ten occurrences,81 communicating someone trustworthy, truthful, faithful. This confirms that Proverbs is not concerned primarily with intellectual faith but in virtuous character.82 This could possibly reflect an understanding that, as Yahweh is the “faithful” God in Deut. 7:9,83 so his people are expected to behave accordingly. Regardless, Proverbs proves a rich mine for the expectations for the correct behavior of the people who fear God.

The actions prescribed and proscribed in Proverbs are quite varied, but there are certain common themes: careful speech, humility, avoiding temptation, generosity to the poor, and other smaller themes such as child rearing, laziness versus industriousness, interactions with one’s neighbors, etc. Crenshaw explains: “If true wisdom consists of the appropriate deed for the moment, then different situations called for varied responses.”84 Proverbs gives different explanations for poverty and different times to speak, but overall trends are readily discernable. The variety of themes is common across wisdom traditions, as is the lack of covenantal signs such as circumcision or dietary regulations. The latter actions may have been assumed or they may not have been deemed as essential in a

79 D. R. Lindsay, *Josephus and Faith: Πιστίς and Πιστεύειν as Faith Terminology in the Writings of Flavius Josephus and the New Testament* (Leiden: Brill, 1993), 21. He continues: “It is obvious that the πιστ- word group in the LXX (especially the verb πιστεύειν) was meant to be understood in light of the Hebrew יְשָׁי. The contribution of the LXX to the development of the πιστ- word group as faith terminology, therefore, cannot be fully appreciated apart from the Hebrew root יְשָׁי.” See also D. R. Lindsay, “The Roots and Development of the πιστ- Word Group as Faith Terminology,” *JSNT* 15 (1993), 103-18.


82 Prov. 20:5 combines άνδρα πιστόν with ἐργον in describing the rarity of a faithful man. This is the only use of these two terms in the same proverb (πιστίς and other πιστ- roots never occur with ἐργον).


“liberal” court setting. Regardless, the emphasis is on moral and ethical imperatives of daily life over covenantal, legal commands.85

One of the most common themes in wisdom is speech and the related topics of boasting and anger. Several examples stand out. For example, Proverbs 10:19 observes: “When words are many, transgression is not lacking, but the prudent are restrained in speech.” The correlation between verbosity and sin is well remarked in Proverbs, and in general taciturnity is praised as the path toward wisdom (cf. 17:27). The wise exhibit careful, considered speech and exemplify control over their emotions. Supporting this, Proverbs 19:11 observes: “Those with good sense are slow to anger,”87 leading to the conclusion that a quick temper is not compatible with the fear of the Lord, and neither is careless speech. Likewise, merely by restraining one’s speech, one avoids a number of sins, such as boasting (Prov. 27:1). To boast about a future, uncertain time marks one a fool. This proverb also ties to the prophetic warnings against prideful humanity (“all flesh is as grass,” Isa. 40:6-8). Speech demarks a distinction between the wise and prudent person living out the “fear of the Lord” and the fools who fail to moderate their behavior, and it proves a perfect litmus test for pride.

One responsibility people have interpersonally is to forgive and not gossip, shown most frequently with the concept of “covering.” The Hebrew verb הָקַשׁ appears eleven times in the book, nearly every time in relation to speech.89 The proper use of “covering” appears in 10:12b, where it is love that fails to disclose another’s wrongdoing: “love covers
all offenses.”90 “Covering” is to the benefit of another, promoting forgiveness while denying the opportunity for gossip. This interpretation is supported in the next two uses of הַשְּׁפִּיעָה, which refer specifically to slander and gossip (10:18; 11:13). Likewise, throughout chapter 17 there are many examples of the damage done by an uncontrolled tongue,91 summarized in the breakdown of community in 17:9: “One who forgives an affront fosters friendship, but one who dwells on disputes will alienate a friend.”92 This text shows that a person hides (חֲפָר, כּוּפְּטֶה) sin by not participating in gossip, a point driven home by the Hebrew of the second phrase, לְשׁוֹנָה בְּרִכְרָרְךָ, wherein someone busily “repeats words.” Gossip and slander destroy the community, but covering sins allows for redemption and peace.

As with boasting, the wise consistently act in humility while the proud merely mark themselves for destruction. Again, a plethora of verses are available for this point, but perhaps the best is Proverbs 18:12:

Before destruction one’s heart is haughty, but humility goes before honor.

This verse combines the promise of humiliation in 11:2 with the pledge of elevation for the humble in 15:33.93 Proverbs 18:12 presents the two “before” scenarios as though those are the only two options for a person’s internal state—pride and humility—as well as the only respective outcomes. One of the marks of a wise person is humility (הוֹנֵס, כוּפְּטֶה).

90 τοὺς μὴ φιλονεικούντας καλύπτει φιλία; cf. Jas. 5:20 (καλύπτει πλήθος ἁμαρτιῶν); 1 Pet. 4:8 (ἀγαπάτη καλύπτει πλήθος ἁμαρτιῶν).
91 Bruce K. Waltke, The Book of Proverbs: Chapters 15–31 (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 2005), 49, notes, “The final malevolent communicator is the gossip (v. 9), who destroys a community already threatened by transgression,” a situation which also concerns James.
92 This example of a person covering sins may provide support for the human agent interpretation of James 5:20c.
93 James repeats this theme in the same language (οὐχὶ, ταπεινὸς; 1:9-11; 4:6-10), although here the οὐχὶ—root is used to describe the prideful person rather than for the honoring of the humble. The principle of 18:12 is directly echoed again in 29:23: “A person’s pride will bring humiliation (ταπεινός, ταπεινωθήσεται), but one who is lowly (οὐχὶ, ταπεινωθέντας) in spirit will obtain honor.” See also 16:19: “It is better to be of a lowly spirit among the poor (πραυδόμος μετὰ ταπεινωθείς), than to divide the spoil with the proud.”
ταπεινώτατοι), which leads to glorification. Meanwhile self-sought glory only leads to humiliation and destruction (11:2; 15:33; 18:12; 29:23). The ταπεινοί—precisely the ones who do not seek honor—are the ones who in the end receive it, presumably from God as well as their neighbors. While Proverbs does not have a fully developed theology of the ἄνωτα, here we see the first contrast of the ἄνωτα and ἄνω. This does not imply that the humble could not be rich, but they are characterized by humility before God, allowing him to elevate them rather than resting secure in their own wealth. 94 The prideful set themselves up for “destruction,” possibly in an eternal sense through the destruction of themselves and their family line.

Another way of discerning the righteous from the wicked occurs in their treatment of the poor. As 29:7 observes: “The righteous (ῥεφᾶς; δίκαις) know the rights of the poor; the wicked have no such understanding.”95 The righteous work on behalf of the poor, enacting justice for them and ensuring that their rights are not taken by those who have no such concerns (cf. 13:23). Similarly, twice Proverbs states that “those who oppress/mock the poor insult their Maker” (14:31; 17:5). The attitude and actions one takes for or against the impoverished reveals one’s state before the Lord. Poverty itself, however, is not a state of righteousness in Proverbs. While some righteous may be poor, poverty more often results from laziness (13:4; 15:19; 19:24; 20:4). Regardless, the righteous defend the rights of the helpless in their society while the wicked use them for their own benefit.

Thus, regarding the categories of “faith” and “works,” faith is the fear of the Lord which leads to a disposition of obedience and wisdom. The person who has the fear of the Lord lives righteously, cares for the poor, and guards their tongue, submitting themselves...

94 See also Prov. 11:28, which begins with the warning that “Those who trust in their riches will wither.” This group is again contrasted with the righteous (ῥεφᾶς; δίκαις)—who will flourish.
95 Cf. Lev. 19:15.
to the words of the teacher and of the law. Moreover, the righteous and the wicked correspond to the humble and the prideful, each category revealing themselves through their actions and words.

3. Judgment and Mercy

Throughout the text of Proverbs there is a quid pro quo relationship between God’s judgment or mercy and human actions of sin or righteousness. Progressing from the prior section, clear categories of the righteous and the wicked prevail here. Notions of eschatological justice are not the concern of the editor(s) of Proverbs, instead judgment and mercy are typified within the span of a person’s life.

In chapter 10, the author repeatedly contrasts the wicked and the righteous. Verse 2 notes, “Treasures gained by wickedness do not profit, but righteousness ( dikaiosu&nh; dikaiosu&nh;) delivers from death (twEmf; qana&tou).” Righteousness opposes injustice in an unexpected life-or-death contrast. Proverbs does not have a concept of eternal life, so this ideal of continued life would be continued earthly life.96 This proverb concludes that righteousness could actually save one’s life in times of danger. For the editors of Proverbs, righteousness works to a tangible goal, as seen in 11:18: “The wicked earn no real gain, but those who sow righteousness get a true reward.”97 The language of earning and sowing suggest long-term character and habits upon which this evaluation takes place, a judgment in which there are only two categories.

We also see a correspondence rule that, as one lives, so one will be rewarded or punished (cf. 11:18, 19, 30). Perhaps the clearest statement of this contrast is in 10:16:

---

96 Roland Murphy, *The Tree of Life: An Exploration of Biblical Wisdom Literature*, 2nd ed. (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1996), 29, advises, “Concretely ‘life’ means riches and honor (22:4), a good name (10:7; 22:1), a long existence of many years (3:16; 28:16).” He cautions, however, “Life is more than merely material goods; these are seen as sacramentals, signs of the Lord’s blessing (10:22). . . . the perspective of Proverbs is life in the here and now.”

97 This foreshadows James’ conclusion in Jas. 3:17: those who “sow peace” will reap a harvest of righteousness. This verse also has the phrase poi&eti; ep&g&as; as in Jas. 1:22-25, but here it is the ungodly who do works of wickedness. Their works reveal their sinful natures in contrast to the fruit of those who sow righteousness.
“The wage of the righteous leads to life, the gain of the wicked to sin.”

Here the contrast is between wages (מלים) and harvest (הוצאת), the one being something the righteous actually earn through their faithful behavior, the other the inevitable outgrowth of the choices of the wicked. Longman explains the rewards: “This verse assumes that both the righteous and the wicked may gain some material substance, but contrasts the value it has for them. Money in the hand of the righteous person is a positive thing, but money in the hand of a wicked person is a negative thing.” Intriguingly God is not the obvious active agent in either blessing or punishing the groups. Rather, sin or life are the expected outcomes for one’s chosen path.

Proverbs 22:22-23 and 23:10-11 both present God taking action in defense of the poor, promising to bring judgment upon the oppressors. By failing to help the helpless, the wicked earn reciprocal treatment from God, just repayment for their deeds (cf. 24:11-12). Moreover, one cannot hide one’s deeds of wickedness from God. The author cautions that God will repay “all” according to their deeds, implying that both righteousness and wickedness will be repaid accordingly. Likewise, Proverbs 24:11-12 also implies its opposite, that if a person does seek to rescue those going astray or being persecuted, they themselves will be rewarded for their efforts.

Proverbs 21:13 presents the necessity of mercy toward the poor if one desires mercy oneself: “If you close your ear to the cry of the poor (יקק; άλλοθευνος), you will cry out and not be heard.” While Longman sees this as referring to human reciprocity, Waltke sees this as stating the same negative principle of James 2:13, contending that “The

---

98 This statement is most closely echoed by Paul in Rom. 6:23, who, however, subverts the proverb so that “life” is no longer a wage but simply a gift; death is the only earnable wage. Prov. 10:16 also has echoes in both Jas. 1:12, wherein the believer wins a crown of life through endurance, and in 5:1-6, wherein the rich earn judgment through their persecution of their workers.


100 If this refers to seeking those who stray, it may sit in the background of Jas. 5:19-20.


102 Longman, Proverbs, 393.
merciful obtain mercy (3:3-4; 19:17; Matt. 5:7; Luke 6:38), but the callous will not be pitied (cf. Ps. 109:6-20; Matt. 18:23-35; 25:31-46; Jas. 2:13). Whether the secondary mercy here is human or divine, the sage notes that those who show mercilessness to the helpless (cf. 22:9), earn mercilessness for themselves. A person’s lack of mercy towards the weak brings about their own powerlessness to attain a hearing in their time of need—from fellow humans or God.

Proverbs 28:13, meanwhile, summarizes the principle of confession James expands: “No one who conceals (πεποκαλυπτός) transgressions will prosper, but one who confesses and forsakes them will obtain mercy (ἀγαπηθησαί).” This contrasts with Proverbs 17:9: whereas one should cover another’s offenses to avoid gossip, to hide one’s own is sinful. Murphy concurs: this is the “only verse in Proverbs calling for confession” and observes that Proverbs allows one to “‘cover’ the faults of another (Prov. 10:12), but not one’s own sins.” The text leaves open whether confession occurs at the interpersonal level with forgiveness as the reciprocal action and may function on two levels: both person-to-person as well as human-to-divine, since this language typifies the human-divine relationship elsewhere.

In brief, the book of Proverbs has several themes that help guide our understanding of early wisdom beliefs regarding “judgment” and “mercy.” First, righteousness alone brings life while wickedness earns death. While much of Proverbs distinguishes what deeds make a person righteous or wicked, the distinctions between the righteous and the wicked become clear as life is lived out. Secondly, “covering” can be used to hide sin and intentional harm, but for the righteous, covering means hiding another’s sins in forgiveness so that they do not become the subject of gossip or slander

---

104 In Longman, Proverbs, 492.
105 E.g. Num. 5:7.
106 E.g. Lev. 5:5, 16:21; 26:40; 1 Kings 8:33-36; etc.
but can resume life in the community. Lack of forgiveness or concern for the poor, meanwhile, are the two activities linked most directly to threats of judgment and a reciprocal lack of mercy. Judgment is most often defined as the overturning of one’s social status or an early death, while mercy most often relates to helping people in distress.

**B. Sirach**

Another traditional wisdom text, Sirach continues many of the same themes as Proverbs, albeit in a more poetic fashion. Unlike Proverbs, Sirach gives historical anecdotes and as a result “the year 180 is generally assigned as the date of the work.” As the first chapter makes clear, the “fear of the Lord” links closely with wisdom, the sign that marks the elect from birth (1:14) to death (1:13). In “keeping the commandments” (1:26), wisdom and the fear of the Lord intersect as the key to life and blessing. Wisdom is a semi-divine character, proceeding from God and participating in creation, and Torah is something that proceeds from and even partly embodies this divine wisdom.
idealizes the Torah as an aspect of God’s wisdom, a transition that has implications for all of the themes.

1. **The Word and The Law**

As with Proverbs, the majority of the 70 uses of λόγος in Sirach refer to “speech” rather than to a specific content.\(^{112}\) Correct speech evidences wisdom (cf. 4:24; 9:17; 20:27; etc): where the fool interrupts and speaks many words, the wise use their words carefully to gain respect. Νόμος, however, gains a new priority in its 30 appearances. As Schnabel observes, the new equation of wisdom and Torah means that now a person’s wisdom relates to their obedience to the Torah, the revelation of God’s wisdom.\(^{113}\) The Prologue establishes this identification as all three references therein are genre specific: the Law and the Prophets (0:1, 5, 20). The role of the wise person becomes the study of the law and texts of wisdom with the obligation to pass on such understanding, while to keep the law reveals wisdom.\(^{114}\) The author consistently reiterates themes such as “whoever holds to the law will obtain wisdom” (15:1); “in all wisdom there is the fulfillment of the law” (19:20); and the wise person “will glory in the law of the Lord’s covenant” (39:8).

\(^{112}\) Eckhard J. Schnabel, *Law and Wisdom from Ben Sira to Paul* (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1985), 39. He finds 73 occurrences of λόγος including two not counted by Hatch and Redpath (36[33]:3; 47:22), summarizing: “54 times it refers to sapiential concepts with regard to ‘speech ethics’. In 5 passages it denotes the word of God in creation (39,31; 42,15; 43,5.10.26) or (48,3.5; cf. 45,3), and in one passage it refers to a prophetic utterance (48,1). It does not refer to the Torah of Israel.”

\(^{113}\) Ibid., 89.

\(^{114}\) Alexander A. DiLella, “Fear of the Lord as Wisdom: Ben Sira 1,11-30,” in *The Book of Ben Sira in Modern Research*, ed. Pancratius C. Beenjes (Berlin: de Gruyter, 1997), 122, calls this the “great Deuteronomic equation found in such texts as Deut 4,5-6; 6,1-5.24; 8,6; 10,12.20; 13,5; 17,19; 31,12-13: to fear the Lord = to love the Lord = to serve the Lord = to walk in his ways = to keep the commandments/Law = to worship the Lord = to be wise.” Bennema, “Strands of Wisdom Tradition,” 63-64, observes that in the “retrospective post-exilic perspective of the Chronicler, a gradual change emerged in the concept of the source of wisdom. . . based on the Mosaic paradigm of Deuteronomy 4:5-6, the (observance of the) Torah had become the locus (or even source) of wisdom, i.e. the (observance of the) Torah had become the means of acquiring or demonstrating wisdom.” He later continues, “The book of *Sirach* probably functions as the best representative of (the continuation of) the Torah-centred wisdom tradition,” even while it had been “influenced by the Spirit-centred wisdom tradition in the OT” as well (68).
One of the few theologically loaded uses of λόγος occurs in 42:15b, commencing the recitation of Israel’s story: ἐν λόγοις κυρίου τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ.115 This statement recalls the creative power of God’s λόγος. Referring to Genesis 1, this verse is a reminder of God’s speech-creation pattern.116 Likewise, Sirach 43:26, ἐν λόγῳ αὐτοῦ σύγκειται τὰ πάντα, now intimates that God’s “word” functions as an active agent maintaining creation. Just as God’s spoken word brought everything into existence, so it also sustains life.

In Sirach 17:11, the author calls the law a νόμον ζωῆς, a phrase repeated in 45:5 in a context referring specifically to the giving of the Law at Sinai.117 A phrase such as this may well refer to Deuteronomy’s refrain that obedience to the law brings life and blessing while disobedience corresponds to death and destruction (especially Deut. 27-30).118 This “law of life” from God to his people is seen positively as what allows them to have life as God’s people, set apart. The commands the author mentions, however, are simply to “avoid evil” and one “concerning the neighbor” (17:14), a pair perhaps seen as the summary of the Torah as a whole.119

The brief retelling of the Abraham story alludes to the law and indicates some flexibility in Israel’s legal history. Whereas Paul argues that Abraham could not have been justified by the law because he came before the law (Gal. 3), Sirach 44:20 proclaims that

115 NRSV adds “and all his creatures do his will.” P. W. Skehan and A. A. DiLella, The Wisdom of Ben Sira (New York: Doubleday, 1980), 484, translate 42:15d as “he accepts the one who does his will,” noting that “this colon is missing from most Gr MSS” and the Hebrew is confusing (487).
116 James 1:18 fits within a recognized wisdom tradition of God’s creative word.
117 Cook, “Law and Wisdom,” 325, notes that “The law of life in these contexts certainly does not fall outside of the semantic fields of the torat Moshe. However, it has more to do with wisdom and understanding—how to live a wise life. Perhaps one could deem the law of life as an indirect reference to the law of Moses.” He then adds, “it is not immediately clear what the law of Moses meant to Ben Sira,” but qualifies, “Even though Sira does not seem preoccupied with the detail of the law of Moses, this does not mean that the stipulations are insignificant to him. . . . It would therefore be incorrect or at least unsubtle to state that Sirach has no interest in things cultic. However, it should be clear that this is not his main interest” (326).
118 Skehan and DiLella, Ben Sira, 282. They note “the Law is Israel’s true knowledge and wisdom, which no other society can match. . . . The law of life . . . is described in Deut 30:11-20.” See also Sir. 32:24, “The one who keeps the law preserves himself, and the one who trusts the Lord will not suffer loss.”
119 These are the exact commands in Jas. 1:27. This summary shows the importance of neighbor love within the covenant.
Abraham ἀνεπτύχθην νόημον υψίστου. Though ben Sira will subsequently glory in the giving of the “law of life” (45:5), that does not inhibit him from announcing that Abraham kept the νόμος. Skehan and DiLella call this a reference “to Abraham’s unquestioning obedience to God’s commands.”120 Seemingly any revelation of God, whether before Sinai or after and whether a “Go” (Abraham) or Ἠ (the Decalogue), requires obedience. Before the giving of the Torah, Abraham kept the law because he obeyed God’s call, avoided evil, and cared for his neighbor.

Finally, in 51:18-20, the author describes his own quest for wisdom, announcing in 51:19b: καὶ ἐν ποιήσει νόημον διηκριβασάμην.121 Here the νόμος is closely related with wisdom: as he sought and studied wisdom, he acted in accordance with the law.122 Also noteworthy is the connection to purity, for in 51:20 he comments “in purity (ἐν καθαρισμῷ) I found her.” Obedience to the law, moral purity, and wisdom herself are all intimately interconnected as they will be again in James.

2. Faith and Works

Sirach assumes that anyone who studies it seeks to honor the Lord and to learn how to please him. The text makes clear, however, that these students stand in potential danger of being misled by false teachers.123 Sirach’s presentation of wisdom and practical life appears as the only correct one for those who wish to live in God’s favor.124

---

120 Skehan and DiLella, Ben Sira, 505.
121 Ibid., 572-73, follow the Hebrew of 11Ps for the whole of this poem about wisdom. In that text verses 13-20a “form the aleph to kaph lines of the alphabetic acrostic.”
122 The expression ποιήσει νόημον bears close relation to James’ discussion of “doing the word/law” in 1:22-25.
123 Randall A. Argall, 1 Enoch and Sirach: A Comparative Literary and Conceptual Analysis of the Themes of Revelation, Creation and Judgment (Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1995), 76, observes: “Ben Sira stresses that his counterparts research unauthorized subjects. Apparently the forbidden material is somewhat attractive and has led to experimentation. Ben Sira urges his students to stay with his instruction.” Collins, “Wisdom, Apocalypticism,” 172, confirms, “Ben Sira, who was surely familiar with early apocalyptic speculation, unequivocally rejected it.”
124 Blenkinsopp, “Interpretation and Sectarianism,” 24-25, notes the tension in this time period: “Conflict was also inevitable in the matter of laws governing ethnic, cultic and ethical qualifications for membership; hence the remarkable emphasis on the contractual basis of participation in the restored community. In such a situation, then, interpretation was not just one of several forms of literary and intellectual activity going on at that time. It was, on the contrary, decisive for the way the community was to understand itself, who was to belong to it, how it was to go about its business.”
Ultimately, the world divides into the righteous and the sinners, and as Argall notes, “The category to which a particular individual belongs is determined by that person’s deeds.”

In the LXX of Sirach, the noun πίστις appears 10 times, the adjective πιστός 13, and the verb πιστεύω 11. In each, God is the only correct object of faith, the only one who is ultimately and completely trustworthy. Accordingly, however, the one who seeks to be wise should be faithful, both toward others and toward God. Lindsay notes:

Πίστις in Sirach, then, is almost exclusively a religious term describing a relationship of faithfulness and obedience toward God. It is ἐν πίστει that a person is sanctified, approved by God, pleasing to God or even redeemed by God. Πίστις is also a virtue—a virtue which endures forever. And even πίστις in relationships with friends has direct implications for one’s relationship to God.

“Faith,” then, is a covenant term signifying faithfulness and obedience. Faith and works are not contrasting terms; fidelity reveals itself in life. This relationship of faithfulness is essential to one’s safety in time of judgment, and Sirach, like Proverbs, offers both generalities and specifics to the path of wisdom.

As we saw above, the covenant of Abraham with God entailed law-keeping (44:20). Equally important in the author’s eyes, however, is Abraham’s faithfulness when tested, shown by the continuation ἐν πειρασμῷ εὐρέθη πιστός. Without that faithfulness, the covenant would have been voided. Ultimately, Sirach places the responsibility to faithfulness on the shoulders of each individual (Sir 15:15): ἔαν θέλησις συντηρήσεις ἐντολὰς (קְרֵצָה) καὶ πίστιν ποιήσαι εὐδοκίας. Sirach equates

---

125 Argall, 1 Enoch and Sirach, 139. He observes this in context of the importance of opposing phenomena in Sirach in relation to a person’s status in the overall picture, noting, “Ben Sira teaches that the categories of sinners and the just have their place within the opposite (נילוים) phenomena of creation (Sir 33:14). As there are opposites of evil and good, death and life, so sinners and the just (cf. 11:14).”

126 Lindsay, Josephus and Faith, 46.

127 Schnabel, Law and Wisdom, 34, observes that the term for commandments (דרש) occurs 10 times in Sirach. More broadly, “In the OT, especially in Deut, הָגדָה is used as the designation of a corpus of decrees and commandments, even as designation of the law as a whole. . . . In the deuteronomistic and chronistic context הָגדָה is often used in sequences of terms for law and commandments which synonymously refer to the whole of, or part of, the law.” After examining the evidence in Sirach, he concludes “that probably all 10 occurrences of הָגדָה in Sir refer to the revealed law of God which, in the historical context, would be
keeping the commandments with acting faithfully, and he makes it quite clear that 
obedience is a choice individuals make. The ones who choose to practice faithfulness 
demonstrate their wisdom and the truth of their commitment to God. Schnabel states, 
“Wisdom and law are one since they are both the expression of God’s will for life. To 
keep the commandments is practiced wisdom, and to be wise means to obey the law— 
both are proof of one’s fear of the Lord and of one’s desire to commit one’s life to God in 
submitting to his will concerning all areas of life.” The Greek gives the intriguing 
expression πίστιν ποιησαί, capturing the idea that faith is enacted. Likewise, this 
faithfulness is a matter of choice, a disposition to will and desire (θέλης) obedience.

Even while Sirach commands one to keep the law, it continues in the wisdom 
contents of the law: protecting the poor, guarding one’s tongue, humility, and monotheism 
among others. Circumcision only makes one appearance in the history section (44:20, 
Abraham), while sacrifice is discussed in moral terms of acceptability to God (e.g., not in 
idolatry [30:19] and not when stolen [34:21-24; 35:15], but in obedience [7:31] and 
righteousness [35:9]). A person’s moral state whether in harboring wrath or in oppressing 
the poor potentially controls whether atonement is effected by the sacrifice. Again, the 
concern of the author is the practicalities of obedience.

identified with the Mosaic law” (35). See also Alexander A. DiLella, The Hebrew Text of Sirach: A Text-Critical 
and Historical Study (Hague: Mouton, 1966), 126.

128 This person stands in direct contrast to the person who blames God for their sins, saying “It was the 
Lord’s doing that I fell away” (15:1ff; cf. Jas. 1:13-15). Sirach states his anthropology in 13:11-20, making it 
unambiguous that he holds each person accountable for their choices to sin or be faithful, whereby each is 
rewarded by their choices (v. 17): “Before each person are life and death, and whichever one chooses will be 
given.” See Murphy, Tree of Life, 75.

129 Schnabel, Law and Wisdom, 82. Sir. 33:2 foreshadows the imagery of James 1:5-8, warning, “The wise will 
not hate the law, but the one who is hypocritical (ὑποκρινόμενος) about it is like a boat in a storm.” James 
uses the term διακρινώμενος and describes that doubter as a “wave of the sea,” but later he warns that the 
wise will be ἀνυπόκριτος (Jas. 3:17). Likewise, the “woes” (Sir. 2:13-14) are pronounced against the timid, 
the lazy, the sinner “who walks a double path” (ἐνπαίηνοὺτι ἐπὶ δύο τρίβους, cf. Jas 1:8, 4:8), the 
fainthearted “who have no trust,” and those who have “lost your nerve.” All of these face “the Lord’s 
reckoning (ἐπισκέπτεται ὁ Κύριος)” (2:14).
One consistent “work” within Sirach is that of almsgiving (ἔλεημοσύνη) and its active ability to save a person from trouble or even death.\(^{130}\) For instance, Sirach 3:30 notes that “almsgiving atones for sin” (also 3:14), in 17:22 almsgiving is compared to “a signet ring with the Lord,” while 40:17 states that “almsgiving endures forever.” Sirach 29:12 and 40:24 twice present the efficacy of almsgiving for saving a person:

σύγκλειον ἔλεημοσύνην ἐν τοῖς ταμιείοις σου καὶ αὕτη ἔξελειται σε ἐκ πάσης κακώσεως

Store up almsgiving in your treasury, and it will rescue you from every disaster. (29:12)

ἀδελφοὶ καὶ βοήθεια ἐῖς καιρὸν θλίψεως καὶ ὑπὲρ ἀμφότερα ἔλεημοσύνη ρύσεται

Kindred and helpers are for a time of trouble, but almsgiving rescues better than either. (40:24)\(^{131}\)

Skehan and DiLella observe that “almsgiving, which is a religious as well as a social obligation, is a central teaching of the Judaism of Ben Sira’s day.”\(^{132}\) More than an obligation, however, almsgiving—showing mercy—has an almost salvific aspect to it. However, 13:24 reveals that “wealth no longer indicated divine favor,”\(^{133}\) revealing an ambiguity in the topic of wealth through which almsgiving provides the path.

In other aspects, Sirach upholds traditional wisdom topics. The author cautions against reckless speech and sluggish ἐργα in 4:29. Moreover, humility in speech and attitude before God is both commended (11:4) and warned (11:21), the latter reminding the reader of God’s ability to overturn the established order in an instant. This calls the reader to trust in God’s justice, recognizing the unstated precept that wealth cannot safeguard from disaster. Likewise, recognizing God as the just judge, Sirach 7:6 warns against stepping into that role: “Do not seek to become a judge (κρίτης), or you may be unable to root out injustice (ἀδικίας); you may be partial (εὐλαβθῆς ἀπὸ...
to the powerful, and so mar your integrity.” This warning is rooted in a long tradition calling for the complete integrity of judges, not favoring either the rich or the poor (Lev. 19:15), but especially safeguarding the rights of the oppressed and the alien (Deut. 1:16; Prov. 31:9). The second line pushes one to see the “injustice” not only as societal but individual, a fault in the person that will bring that one under judgment.

In a section much like Hebrew’s “Hall of Faith” (chapter 11), Sirach 44-50 recounts the faithful (and unfaithful) of Israel. The faithful are noted for “pleasing God” (Enoch in 44:16) and being “perfect and righteous” (Noah in 44:17). Moreover, from Abraham onward people are praised for “keeping the law” and the covenant (44:20) while those who acted out of envy and anger instead of faithfulness and humility are destroyed in their sins (e.g., Korah and his followers, 45:18-19). The author follows the prophetic and priestly offices, clearly building up a history pointing toward the rightful priesthood of Simon (50:1), a right based on a history of faithful, obedient people. Faith exists only as faithfulness, in works done in submission to God’s revealed will.

Sirach 51:30, the final verse of the book, concludes: ἔργαζετο τὸ ἔργον ὑμῶν πρὸ καιροῦ καὶ διώσει τὸν μισθὸν ὑμῶν ἐν καιρῷ αὐτοῦ (cf. also 16:12, 14; 35:24). Faithfulness, ultimately, is the call to the wise and will be rewarded by God. A person is called to study the teachings, seek to grow in wisdom and obedience to the Law in humility before God, and trust him to reward as he will. Skehan and DiLella conclude that, in Sirach, “to be faithful one must keep the Law and so do God’s will. Faith, in the biblical sense of the word implies not only an act of the intellect, which accepts God’s word as true and normative, but also the activity of the will that puts belief into action.”

134 This expression seems a precursor to Jas. 2:1, προσωπολημψίας.
135 This is in contrast to God’s impartiality, seen in 35:15 (LXX 35:12) which warns the hearers from relying on dishonest sacrifices to save them since “the Lord is the judge (κύριος κριτὴς οὐτω), and with him there is no partiality.”
136 Skehan and DiLella, Ben Sira, 272.
3. Judgment and Mercy

The author of Sirach bounds God’s judgment and mercy in this world, evident in a person’s life and manner of death. Skehan and DiLella argue that “Even though Ben Sira did not believe in the afterlife, he could rightly affirm that the person who fears the Lord will be blessed even on the day of death because his earthly life had been blessed by the Lord (1:11-12) and others will consider him to have been blessed.”137 The obedient receive God’s blessing and mercy any time up to death, while those who are disobedient fall under God’s judgment.

Sirach 2:11 reaffirms Exodus 34:6-7, revealing God’s faithfulness to his people. God is οἰκτίρμων καὶ ἔλεημων, and he ἀφίησιν ἀμαρτίας καὶ σώζει ἐν καιρῷ θλίψεως.138 This reminder of God’s character as both compassionate and merciful appears eleven times in the OT as a fundamental summary of God’s interactions with humanity.139 Sinlessness is not expected: forgiveness is a foremost example of God’s nature.140 This expression of God’s covenantal mercy, however, is immediately followed by a threefold “Woe” passage (vv. 12-13) that warns those who doubt God will not receive mercy or forgiveness.141 The author urges his readers to remain faithful in 2:18, for unlike human rulers, the mercy of the Lord is immeasurable and intrinsic to his identity.

---

137 Ibid., 144.
138 Ibid., 151, note that the “Syr has ‘salvation’ (or ‘redemption’)” instead of mercy in vv. 7 and 11, showing a later equation of these two concepts. See also 17:29, “How great is the mercy of the Lord, and his forgiveness for those who return to him,” where God’s mercy is defined in terms of his forgiveness of those who repent, his response to their repentance rather than to their accumulation of sin. Interestingly, the term for “mercy” here is ἐλεημοσύνη, consistently used elsewhere for almsgiving (see above). This paints a picture of the individual as entirely dependant upon the divine alms as it were.
139 Cf. Jonah 4:2. Only in Ps. 112 does this combination of terms occur in relation to a righteous human rather than God.
140 Sir. 8:5 reminds, “Do not reproach one who is turning away from sin; remember that we all deserve punishment.” The second half of the couplet is remarkable because it urges empathy precisely because the person repenting and the person watching are in the same position before God: that of equal guilt (or “equally valuable” in the Greek, ἑπίτιμοι).
Sirach 5:1-8 juxtaposes God’s patience with his wrath, urging the reader to repent and turn to God while he is patient. Addressing the sin of presuming on God’s forgiveness, Sirach 5:6 warns in an echo of 2:11:

καὶ μὴ εἴπης ὃ ὁ στέρμασις αὐτοῦ πολὺς τὸ πλῆθος τῶν ἁμαρτίων μου ἐξιλασεῖται ἔλεος γὰρ καὶ ὀργή παρὰ αὐτῷ, καὶ ἐπὶ ἁμαρτωλὸς καταπαύει ὁ θυμὸς αὐτοῦ.

Do not say, “His mercy is great, he will forgive the multitude of my sins,” for both mercy and wrath are with him, and his anger will rest on sinners.

The author does not dispute God’s great compassion, but when a person presumes upon God’s mercy they become objects of wrath. The language of pride and of “adding sin to sin” (v. 5) in this passage clarifies that, by their casual attitude to sin, these people habitually choose to sin and therefore earn judgment instead of mercy.

Again in chapter 16 the author ponders God’s judgment on the wicked, contrasting the might of God’s mercy with the strength of his wrath. Verses 11b and 12 are particularly fruitful for understanding this contrast:

εἰλτεν ἔλεος ἡμῖν καὶ ὀργὴ παρ’ αὐτῷ ἀναστήσεις ἐξιλασμῶν καὶ
ἐκχεών ὀργήν. κατὰ τὸ πολὺ ἔλεος (ἢ ἀλλὰ) αὐτοῦ ὀφέλος καὶ πολὺς ὁ
ἐλεγχὸς αὐτοῦ ἄνδρα κατὰ τὰ ἔργα (ἢ ἀλλὰ) αὐτοῦ κρινεῖ.

For mercy and wrath are with the Lord; he is mighty to forgive—but he also pours out wrath. Great as is his mercy, so also is his chastisement; he judges a person according to his or her deeds.

God is again described as “mighty to forgive,” a reminder that sinlessness is not expected but balanced by warnings of his wrath. More significantly, “mercy” and “wrath” seem to be the only two outcomes of his judging. If judgment is “according to deeds,” mercy or punishment both result from the individual’s actions, a theme 16:13 spells out even more clearly. This verse is perhaps the clearest statement of the principle that mercy is the positive outcome of justice and judgment the negative. God maintains a just judgment

142 The Hebrew term for mercy here appears in key statements in the MT for God’s mercy, such as Deut. 13:17 or 2 Sam. 24:14.
143 בְּרִית appears only in the MT in Prov. 8:22 to describe the creation of Wisdom, “the first of his acts of long ago.”
144 God’s right to decide a person’s fate is affirmed in 18:2, which declares, κύριος μόνος δικαστήσεται. This resonates in James 4:12 wherein God is the sole lawgiver and judge.
according to deeds, but repentance counts as a deed of righteousness that allows one to be judged among the righteous rather than the wicked. This situates the call to repentance in 17:25-32 with its congruent celebration of God’s mercy.

The psalm in Sirach 18 praises God and his power as contrasted to the fragility of humans. Verse 11 indicates God’s common grace to all people as expressed in his patience with humans. The author observes that while mortals can only have compassion for a person they can see, “the mercy of the Lord is on all flesh” (ἐλεος δε κυριου επι πασαν σαρκα, v. 13b). He therefore instructs and encourages his audience toward repentance and obedience. Verse 14, however, gives an important qualification to the preceding general statement:

τοις ἐκδεχομένοις παιδίαν ἐλη καὶ τοὺς κατασπεύδοντας ἐπὶ τὰ κρίματα αὐτοῦ.
He has compassion on those who accept his discipline and who are eager for his precepts.

While Skehan and DiLella report that “the Lord is especially ‘merciful to those who accept his guidance,’”¹⁴⁵ such a distinction does not seem textually necessary. Snaith, in contrast, observes, “God’s apparently free-ranging forgiveness and compassion is quickly limited to those who seek true wisdom. This brings the passage into conformity with earlier parts of the book and forms a fitting close to the section.”¹⁴⁶ God’s mercy, specified in verse 13b as for all flesh, is appropriated by those who follow his commands and endure his discipline.

Sirach 27:30-28:7, expounding the lex talionis, demonstrates the proportionality of divine forgiveness:

ὁ ἐκδίκων παρὰ κυρίου ἐὑρήσει ἐκδίκησιν καὶ τας ἁμαρτίας αὐτοῦ διατηρήσει. ἄφες ἀδίκημα τῷ πλησίον σου καὶ τότε δεηθέντος σου αἱ ἁμαρτίαι σου λυθήσονται.
The vengeful will face the Lord’s vengeance, for he keeps a strict account of their sins. Forgive your neighbor the wrong he has done, and then your sins will be pardoned when you pray.¹⁴⁷

¹⁴⁵ Skehan and DiLella, Ben Sira, 286, emphasis mine.
¹⁴⁶ John G. Snaith, Ecclesiasticus or the Wisdom of Jesus Son of Sirach (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1974), 93, emphasis his.
¹⁴⁷ Cf. Matt. 6:13-14; Jas. 2:12-13. Sir. 28:1 makes the same statement as Jas. 2:13a but uses the language of vengeance rather than mercilessness.
The author here depicts gaining God’s forgiveness as entirely reliant upon the individual’s choice to forgive rather than take vengeance. The person who takes vengeance into their own hands usurps God’s role. Sirach 28:4-5 continue the explicit warnings: “If one has no mercy (οὐκ ἔχει ἔλεος) toward another like himself, can he then seek pardon for his own sins? If a mere mortal harbors wrath, who will make an atoning sacrifice for his sins?”

He concludes that justice for the unforgiving person is that their own sins will not be forgiven by God. Failure to forgive leaves one outside the process for appropriating divine forgiveness within the covenant (διαθήκη, v. 7): sins cannot be atoned and justice is merciless. Obtaining God’s mercy in judgment is understood within and demanded by Israel’s covenant. These commands may be a logical outworking of the lex talionis within the Torah, but they may also be practical application of the law of neighbor love in Leviticus 19:18.

Continuing this principle, among God’s “unforgivable” is the person who ruthlessly takes from the needy (cf. 34:23-27). God hears the prayers of the oppressed and works to bring them the justice they deserve. Sirach 35:22 promises that God will crush “the loins of the unmerciful (ἀνελημόνων),” but this is paired with encouragement to wait in 35:25-26:

έως κρίνῃ τὴν κρίσιν τοῦ λαοῦ αὐτοῦ καὶ εὑρανεῖ αὐτοὺς ἐν τῷ ἔλεει αὐτοῦ. ὅρατον ἔλεος ἐν καιρῷ θλίψεως αὐτοῦ ὡς νεφέλαι ιετοῦ ἐν καιρῷ ἀβροχίας (LXX 35:23-24)

. . . until he judges the case of his people and makes them rejoice in his mercy. His mercy is as welcome in time of distress as clouds of rain in time of drought.

148 Although there are remarkably similar statements in the Test. XII Patriarchs (Gad and Zebulon), it is unclear whether these are later Christian interpolations into the text (see Skehan and DiLella, Ben Sira, 363-64). Davis, Lex Talionis, 57 does note this passage, but he does no more than compare it to Leviticus 19:18.

149 This continues the resemblance with Jas. 2:13a, wherein judgment is said to be ἀνελεον to the one who fails to show mercy (τῷ μὴ ποιήσαντι ἔλεος). One cannot attain mercy or, in Sirach, atone for one’s own sins, without showing mercy to others.

150 “Commandment” (ἐντολή) in 28:6-7 may well refer back to Leviticus 19:18, ἀγαπήσεις τοῦ πλησίον σου. “Remembering” one’s true position before God plays a significant role in Sirach, using it to urge for humility in our interactions at all times.

151 The terms ἀνελημόνως and ἀνελημένων provide the closest antecedents to James’ term ἀνελεον, and intriguingly they only appear in wisdom texts in the LXX: Prov. 5:9; 11:17; 12:10; 17:11; 27:4; Job 6:21; 18:13; 30:21; Wisd. 12:5; Sir. 13:12; 35:22; 37:11. Every use except Job 30:21 refers to human mercilessness, and there the referent is not clear.
Language of justice (κρίνη τῆς κρίσεως) pairs with language of mercy (ἐλεος ἐν καιρῷ θλίψεως), but the context clarifies that mercy is for the oppressed people (i.e., the righteous in Israel) who wait helplessly for God to act (cf. Jas. 5:7-8). The unmerciful and unrighteous receive his vengeance (ἐκδίκησις, LXX v. 20) for their mistreatment of the widow, the orphan, the poor. These verses from Sirach reiterate the principle that showing mercy is necessary to receiving God’s mercy, but it is also in context of a communal prayer. As a group the Gentiles have oppressed righteous Israel, thereby bringing themselves into God’s judgment; but “his people” will find their redemption when God comes to judge their enemies. This serves as a reminder that often sin and righteousness work themselves out in community and mercy or judgment can be earned by entire communities—even if every individual may not fall into the particular habits of their group.

These samples draw a picture of God as fully just and fully merciful. The language of judgment can relate to human actions as judges but more often to divine evaluation of human deeds, particularly evil. The author teaches that judgment of the wicked will be seen within this world, whether in the manner of death or their children’s rebellious or impoverished lives (LXX 11:28). Righteousness does not entail perfection but an active pursuit of God’s law and repentance from sinfulness. Mercy is often a human action, especially that of almsgiving, but when it comes from God it is given to those who act mercifully and leads to rejoicing on the part of those who receive it (e.g., 16:11-12; 35:25). Mercy is a hoped for and anticipated work of the Lord, not to be presumed upon but an assured promise to the righteous in accordance with their deeds. The divine mercy is not clearly defined, but is closely equated with forgiveness of sin. It is an aspect of God’s character that reveals itself in conjunction with judgment as the positive result of divine justice. God is patient with creation, but through continued disobedience, the sinner incurs
God’s judgment. In the end, both mercy and judgment are earned by the person’s life and choices in response to God’s Torah.

C. WISDOM OF SOLOMON

The Wisdom of Solomon is a crucial transition text in which the awareness of an afterlife fully emerges within wisdom literature. Most likely originating in Alexandria in the first century B.C.E., this book “exhorts the Jewish people to remain faithful to its religious heritage” and staunchly uses logic and Greek rhetoric to defend the reasonable nature of the Jewish faith in a Hellenistic environment. Murphy calls it “an interesting example of a biblical writer who took seriously the culture of his day, while elaborating his own vision of faith.” The author changes the question of God’s justice because justice ultimately occurs in the afterlife. Whereas Proverbs and Sirach announced that wisdom brings life, Wisdom proclaims a new understanding of life—one that does not need to be visible to affirm. Murphy explains, however, “immortality is not rooted in the human makeup, but in one’s relationship with God,” the outcome of a life lived wisely.

This idea of immortality seems to be a blending of ideas that have been the domain of the burgeoning apocalyptic genre. Collins explains:

The worldview of these early apocalypses may be contrasted with that of the biblical wisdom books in three crucial respects: (1) the increased importance of the supernatural world and supernatural agents in human affairs . . . ; (2) the expectation of eschatological judgment and reward or punishment beyond death; and (3) the perception that something is fundamentally wrong with this world.

152 Cf. Kent L. Yinger, Paul, Judaism, and Judgment According to Deeds (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1999), 87, who concludes concerning the intertestamental literature, that “given the central importance of judgment conceptions to these writings, the motif might be better termed ‘divine judgment according to deeds,’ even where the verb is one of repayment.”


154 Murphy, Tree of Life, 85.

155 Ibid., 86. He continues, “It appears as if immortality is so positive a concept (life with God before and beyond death) that the wicked are considered not to live on in any real sense.” Thus it is only the righteous who can be said to have immortal souls. Also, “no reference is made to the resurrection of the body. The author was interested not in the mode but in the meaning of immortality—to be with God permanently.”

Intriguingly, Collins does not discuss the Wisdom of Solomon in his essay even as he gives other examples wherein these two seemingly incompatible genres have cross-pollinated.\textsuperscript{157} His summary of the differences between the genres of “wisdom” and “apocalyptic,” however, reveal the distinctives of Wisdom in contrast to Sirach and Proverbs and its pivotal role in wisdom’s literary history: while (1) is less crucial—the author freely mocks idols and holds humanity to blame for most of its ills, both (2) and (3) are definite features, particularly (2). Wisdom enters a new territory where a person’s response to wisdom, their actions and righteousness, have implications far beyond a lifetime.

1. The Word and The Law

In Wisdom, λόγος (15 occurrences) reveals the philosophical overtones of “reason” whilst retaining its most common meaning of “words/speech” or—as seen in Proverbs—a set of instructions. Νόμος appears only ten times, a mere third of the references in Sirach. At least three times νόμος refers to a false, human law in direct contradiction to God’s way (2:11, 12; 14:16). People create their own laws, but the text makes it clear that in so doing they sin, are foolish, and are headed for destruction (2:24). Likewise, for someone who leads and thereby claims a share of wisdom, a failure to lead according to the laws of God brings condemnation (6:4). In Wisdom, the law is something divinely given and not of human origin.\textsuperscript{158}

The influence of Greek philosophy on λόγος makes its most obvious appearance in 2:2 where it is best understood as “reason, rationality”: “reason (ὁ λόγος) is a spark

\textsuperscript{157} However, see John J. Collins, “The Mysteries of God: Creation and Eschatology in 4QInstruction and the Wisdom of Solomon,” in Wisdom and Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls and in the Biblical Tradition, ed. F. García Martínez (Leuven: Leuven University Press, 2003), 287, where he comments: “The novelty of the worldview of the Wisdom of Solomon is commonly attributed to the influence of two factors: Hellenistic, Platonic philosophy, and Jewish apocalyptic traditions.”

\textsuperscript{158} Bennema, “Strands of Wisdom Tradition,” 71, calls Wisdom the “best representative” of what he calls “Spirit-centred wisdom.” He states, “The exact association, if any, between Wisdom and Torah is difficult to determine. . . . Wisdom is more the archetypal Torah, of which the Mosaic Law is but an image, i.e. the teachings of the Torah are tokens of divine Wisdom. . . . Wisdom’s laws are identical with Wisdom’s teaching/instruction (6:17-18), the content of which includes not only the divine commandments but also God’s will and purpose in the widest sense of the word.”
kindled by the beating of our hearts.”\textsuperscript{159} This expression, however, is part of the faulty reasoning of the wicked, revealing their failure to understand the much more significant nature of humans as created by God and eternal creatures. In a more traditional understanding of λόγος, in 6:9 the words are the vessel by which wisdom is communicated to the rulers, the content being the unspecified totality of wisdom rather than a particular set of rules.

Lady Wisdom herself, however, has changed the referent and outcome of obedience to her law. In 6:18, for the first time obedience brings not simply life but immortality. The “law of life” from Sirach has gained an entirely new implication. In terms of the law’s content, however, Winston notes that “the author, unlike Ben Sira, nowhere explicitly identifies Wisdom with Torah,” concluding that Wisdom 6:18 “probably refers to the statues of natural law.”\textsuperscript{160} Schnabel concurs, “the author of SapSal seems to avoid references to the Jewish (!) law.”\textsuperscript{161} Whereas Sirach has wisdom find her home in the temple of Jerusalem, the Wisdom of Solomon nowhere claims that but links wisdom closely with the divine and with those who seek her. Wisdom requires the obedience of a rational mind.

Twice, however, νόμος clearly refers to the Law of Moses. In Wisdom 16, the Israelites are said to have received punishments as a warning, εἰς ἀνάμνησιν ἐντολῆς νόμου σου (16:6b). Their discipline was for the sake of returning them to the commands so recently received at Sinai. Another allusion to this law-giving occurs, counter-intuitively, later in the text but referring to Israel’s prior escape from Egypt. In 18:4c, the authors

\textsuperscript{159} Statements like this open the possibility of the Stoic interpretation of the λόγος in Jas. 1:21.

\textsuperscript{160} David Winston, “Wisdom in the Wisdom of Solomon,” in In Search of Wisdom, ed. Leo G. Perdue, Bernard Brandon Scott, and William Johnston Wiseman (Louisville: WJK, 1993), 157. He continues, “Very likely [the author] believed with Philo that the teachings of the Torah were tokens of divine Wisdom, and that they were in harmony with the law of the universe and as such implant all the virtues in the human psyche, but when he focuses his attention on Wisdom, it is philosophy, science, and the arts that are uppermost in his mind. . . . She is clearly the archetypal Torah, of which the Mosaic law is but an image.”

\textsuperscript{161} Collins, “The Mysteries of God,” 291, merely notes, “Incorruptability is assured by keeping the laws of wisdom,” without further defining wisdom’s law.

\textsuperscript{161} Schnabel, Law and Wisdom, 131. He gives “possible references to the Jewish law [in] 2,12; 6,4; 9,9; 18,4.”
proclaims the Israelites were to receive τὸ ἔθνος λόγος τῶν αἰώνων,\(^\text{162}\) called again in 18:9 the “divine law” (τὸν τῆς θείτητος νόμον). The obedience of the Israelites during the Exodus and after preserved them as God’s people, enabling the light of the law to be given to the world.\(^\text{163}\)

Wisdom also shows the creative and healing aspects of God’s word. In Wisdom 9:1, the author begins a prayer to God by recognizing his work of creation: ὁ ποιήσας τὰ πάντα ἐν λόγῳ σου.\(^\text{164}\) Here again we see a link between ποιέω and λόγος (cf. Prov. 5:2), but here God acts by the λόγος, which itself is the agent in the creation ex nihilo. As well as being the creation agent, the author reveals that God’s λόγος also heals. In 16:12, he affirms, ὁ σὸς κύριε λόγος ὁ πάντας ἱομένος. When God acts, the λόγος is his agent, a creative and redemptive force.

\section*{2. Faith and Works}

Wisdom offers a nuanced perspective on faith, since its purpose is to defend Jewish monotheism and practices. It validates faith in YHWH as a reasonable choice while also utilizing traditional wisdom principles to present the rationality of the lifestyle (works) of the true Jews. Arguing for the faith and practice of the Jewish people, Wisdom presents potentially the most theological picture of God from any of the traditional wisdom texts, and also defends its view of right and wrong behavior as a necessary consequence of accepting the truth about God.

In this text, the terms πίστις and πιστός at first appear less relevant, appearing only one time each (3:14 and 3:9, respectively). Πίστις appears in the surprise praise of

\(^{162}\) Note the similarity of language here with Jas. 1:17: the language of giving (δίδωσιν here vs. δόσις and δώρα in Jas.) as well as the mention of light (φῶς vs. “father τῶν φώτων”). Here the law is both what is given and what brings light, whereas James leaves the “gift” undefined but in the next verse mentions rebirth “by the λόγος of truth,” providing an interesting parallel constellations of ideas.

\(^{163}\) This contra Schnabel, Law and Wisdom, 132, who concludes that “the law is conceived as a universal entity. The significance of the particularistic Jewish laws is played down. The ethical perspective of the law is emphasized.”

\(^{164}\) This as part of a threefold doctrinal affirmation: God is the God of the author’s ancestors (therefore faithful), merciful, and the creator.
the eunuch of 3:14, one of the few texts to declare a eunuch “blessed” (μακαρία, from 3:13) because of his faithfulness (πίστεως). It is immediately followed by the promise that “the fruit of good labors is renowned” (3:15). Fruit is the reward, the logical outgrowth of a person’s works, contrasted with the destruction of the wicked foretold in both 3:10-13 and 3:16-19. The adjective πιστός in 3:9b, meanwhile, appears in context of judgment with the promise that “the faithful will abide with him in love,” the culmination of the pledge to the righteous given in 3:1. Throughout 3:9, the faithful are also described as “those who trust” (πεποιθότες), the “holy ones” (English only in parallel with 4:15), and the “elect” (ἐκλεκτοί). “Those who act in a faithful manner” is the definition of the “elect.”

The corresponding category of “those who trust” in 3:9 indicate that verbs of “faith” and “belief” in Wisdom lean toward practical trust: a mental assent with logically following behavior. Together πείθω and πιστεύω occur nine times, with πείθω slightly more prevalent (5 uses). The Lord corrects those who sin so that they might put their trust in him (πιστεύω, 12:2), assumedly no longer to sin. Conversely, one shows trust by putting one’s weight on a raft so that one doesn’t sink (πιστεύω, 14:5). In the former, an action on God’s part leads to the obvious conclusion that people ought to put their trust in God, in the latter, it is the person’s action that shows their trust that the wood will float and save them. In both cases, the trust or faith proves salvific. Wisdom 16:26 contrasts food with the word of the Lord, proclaiming: τὸ ῥῆμα σου τοὺς σοὶ πιστεύοντας διατηρεῖ. This biblical principle testifies to the proper relationship of God’s people to his word. The πιστεύοντας, the ones who truly trust in and believe God, will be

---

165 Compare Jas. 3:18.
166 Cf. Deut. 8:3; Matt. 4-4.
sustained by his word because it teaches them how to live and brings them into the path of life.\textsuperscript{167}

In contrast, idolatry is the ultimate failure to trust God, who has revealed himself to all people and is the only Being worthy of worship. Chapters 13-15 repeatedly ridicule those who worship idols they created in their quest for God. Apparently, God could be found through investigation of the natural world but these people fail to persist. Instead of finding God, they create gods out of “the cast off pieces of his work” (13:12) or a “fragile piece of wood” (14:2). The author calls “the idea of making idols . . . the beginning of fornication” and “the corruption of life” (14:12). In contrast, to know God is “complete righteousness” (15:3).\textsuperscript{168} In the wilderness, God’s people were saved partly because of their faithfulness to God and renunciation of idolatry (19:6). While those who acted wickedly among them were punished, the Israelites on the whole were faithful to the true God in contrast to the idolaters of other nations.

Other than avoiding idolatry, Wisdom is less specific about the works essential to a faithful person. It makes the standard censure of careless speech early on, warning in 1:11 that the result of sinful talk is destruction, a standard warning for the dangerous effects of careless and slanderous speech.\textsuperscript{169} The author illustrates this warning much later in the complaints of the Israelites in the wilderness that led to their destruction by their own desires (19:11-12). The admonition for careful speech in 1:11 is followed in 1:12 by the caution not to “bring on destruction by the works (\textit{\textepsilon\nu\gamma\omicron\omicron\omicron}) of your hands.” As wrongful speech brings punishment, so also one’s works can condemn a person. Indeed, 1:9bc already linked words and deeds, for the \textit{\textlambda\omicron\gamma\omicron\omicron\nu} comes to the Lord and convicts them for

\textsuperscript{167} Ο\textit{i ά\textit{i\textit{i\textit{i} ο\textit{u} ο

\textsuperscript{168} Wisd 1:2b particularly foreshadows James' warning against being “doubleminded” by doubting God, commenting “he is found by those who do not put him to the test, and manifests himself to those who do not distrust him.” If being anything other than single-minded indicates idolatry, then the doubleminded in Jas. stand condemned not merely for a lack of faith but for idolatry as well.

\textsuperscript{169} This verse foreshadows Jas 3:1-12 and the havoc that can “result” from imprudent speech, while a lying tongue certainly would be described as being set on fire by \textit{\textgamma\i\nu\nu\i\mu\nu}, destroying the soul (Jas. 3:6).
their ἀνομματων. Their very words substantiate their guilt, a warning that recurs in 1:16 where the author warns, “the ungodly by their words (λόγοις) and deeds (χεροίν) summoned death.” Both speech and action count for—or against—a person in judgment (cf. 2:10-24).

The righteous show both the proper care for strangers and endure testing. In chapter 19, the Egyptians are condemned for a lack of hospitality in parallel with Sodom’s experience with Lot and the angels. Although almsgiving (ἐλεημοσύνη) is not mentioned once in Wisdom, the Egyptians are condemned for their failed charity. Meanwhile, those who endure testing gain God’s approval, as in 3:5: “Having been disciplined a little, they will receive great good, because God tested them and found them worthy of himself.”

While Wisdom makes clear that people choose their own evil deeds (1:16; or at the devil’s prompting, 2:24), it equally recognizes that people’s choices to persist in righteousness despite testing brings them life (5:15). Therefore Wisdom urges each reader to acknowledge the God who has revealed himself in history and nature and worship only him in faithfulness.

3. Judgment and Mercy

This is the first text in which a theology of the afterlife has developed, thus themes of mercy or punishment at a final judgment are possible to trace. Throughout Wisdom, God is described as merciful, initially to all people but in the judgment after death solely to those categorized as “the righteous.” At that point, the wicked bear the brunt of God’s unyielding wrath.

---

170 Wisd 3:5 sets up Jas. 1:12 with its discussion of enduring πειρασμόν in order to win; likewise it parallels Jas. 1:2-4, for both texts understand trials (πειρασμός) and testing (πειράζω) as God’s work within his people, meant for their good.

171 Collins, “The Mysteries of God,” 293: “The hope of the righteous in Wisdom is not resurrection, but immortality. The objection is often raised that immortality in Wisdom does not derive from the inherent nature of the soul, as it does in Plato, but is a gift of God, and cogent on righteousness.”

172 Crenshaw, Old Testament Wisdom, 166, comments, “Sirach’s emphasis on divine mercy is carried forward with vigor,” but notes a parallel theme of election throughout the text.

173 Reiser, Jesus and Judgment, 46, observes, “The author of this book is not the first to have presented historical eschatology and eschatology of the hereafter side by side without creating a genuine system of
Wisdom emphasizes the human responsibility, insisting “on our active participation in the divine plan and the relative freedom that characterizes our ethical role.”

Chapter one begins with how unrighteous speech and life serve to bring about one’s judgment. The audience is warned in 1:12, “Do not invite death by the error of your life, or bring on destruction by the works of your hands.” Speech and deeds equally warrant judgment. The author notes that “justice” (δίκη), when on the wicked, will “punish” them for their sins of speech. Judgment is death without immortality. These people are described as having “invited” (1:12) and “summoned death” (1:16) through their unrighteous deeds.

In chapter 6, the rulers are warned of judgment if they fail to rule wisely (e.g., 6:2c-5). Not only will they be subject to God’s terrifying judgment, but also their public position places them in greater danger of failure and thus greater condemnation (continued in 6:6, where ἐλάχιστος can attain ἐλέους but the δυνατοὶ δὲ δυνατῶς ἔτασθήσωνται; again 6:8). While these verses do not state that leaders cannot receive mercy, they clearly imply that their judgment will be harder. We may also see hints of a preferential option for the poor, since the lowly more easily find God’s mercy while the leaders more readily earn judgment.

Chapter 3 balances the truth of the security of the righteous with the reality of trials on earth, explaining life’s difficulties as the way God tests his people. By enduring testing, the righteous confirm themselves to be among the faithful who “abide with him in love” (3:9). The key to chapter 3, however, is its attempt to explain the early death of the leaders.
faithful. Overturning the expectation that the reward of the righteous is long life, Wisdom deals with those who have died young. Seeing their early deaths as God’s gift to spare them further testing, the author is able to expand this as an answer for others who were righteous and yet died young.\(^\text{178}\) Wisdom 5:15-16 then shows the reward of the righteous in several ways, the first being eternal life (ἐἰς τὸν αἰῶνα ζωὴν, v. 15a) as a reward (μισθός, v. 15b). It also states that they will receive from the Lord a crown (βασιλείαν, v. 16).\(^\text{179}\) In Wisdom, continued life and the glorious crown are specifically described as a reward from the Lord, the just outcome for their righteous life (cf. the μισθὸν κόπον, 10:17).\(^\text{180}\) Ultimately, 6:10 emphasizes: οἱ γὰρ φυλάξαντες ὅσιως τὰ ὁσία ὁσιωθησόνται. Those who observe holiness will be made holy by God, or rather, God judges as holy those who have acted in a holy manner. 

Wisdom 3:9c and 4:15 create an inclusio, emphasizing the opposite fortunes of the various characters depicted between them in the text. The two citations read:

\[\text{ὁτι χάρις καὶ ἔλεος τοῖς ἐκλεκτοῖς αὐτοῦ (3:9c)}\]
\[\ldots \text{because grace and mercy are upon [ . . . his elect]}
\]
\[\text{ὁτι χάρις καὶ ἔλεος ἐν τοῖς ἐκλεκτοῖς αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐπισκοπὴ ἐν τοῖς ὁσίοις αὐτοῦ (4:15)}\]
\[\ldots \text{that God’s grace and mercy are with his elect, and that he watches over his holy ones.}\]

Contextually, since in 3:9 these righteous have already been tested and died, the implication is soteriological and eschatological. Likewise, in 4:15 Enoch has “been taken,” so the implication is again soteriological. The author uses χάρις throughout the rest of the book to indicate a gift (8:21; 14:26), while ἔλεος is both a character trait of God (9:1) and a trait of God’s rule (6:6; 11:9; 12:22; 15:1). Combining the terms, these verses serve to

\(^{178}\) See Crenshaw, Old Testament Wisdom, 170.
\(^{179}\) James’ description of the στέφανος τῆς ζωῆς in 1:12 almost seems a combination of all three descriptions.
\(^{180}\) Collins, “The Mysteries of God,” 294, cautions, “Immortality was not strictly a reward for righteousness, however. It was the original design of the creator for all humanity” (294).
\(^{181}\) The NRSV follows some MSS in 3:9 to add greater parallelism: “because grace and mercy are upon his holy ones, and he watches over his elect” where the LXX has what is copied above. Likewise, NRSV 4:15 incorporates LXX 4:14b thus making the English verse longer.
summarize the contrast between the righteous and the ungodly, a mark upon the righteous that sets them in stark opposition with the punishment the wicked “deserve” (3:10).

From chapter 10 onward, the author emphasizes the role of Wisdom in guiding and guarding the “righteous” because of their righteousness, while the “wicked” fail to please God. Wisdom 11:9-10 clarifies that the Israelites were εὐ ἔλεει παὶδευόμενοι, in contrast to the “ungodly” who were μετ ὄργης θρινόμενοι. While the Israelites were punished for disobedience, this discipline in itself was mercy, a warning received only by this “holy people and blameless race,” not by the “ungodly.”\(^\text{182}\) The author continues with an excursus on the divine mercy, proclaiming God as “merciful (ἔλεεις) to all, for you can do all things, and you overlook people’s sins, so that they may repent” (11:23).\(^\text{183}\) He sees the purpose of God’s discipline as salvation, however futile, as with the Canaanites in 12:10.\(^\text{184}\) This verse has the only biblical precedent for the term ἐμφυτος,\(^\text{185}\) presenting the reader with a group who cannot repent because their wickedness is inherent to their very being.

In final contrasts of God’s mercy and judgment, idolators and the Egyptians are highlighted as deserving God’s just judgment (δίκη ἐπεζέρχεται, 14:31) for their sins, even while God’s people rest confidently in his mercy (15:1-3). Failure to know God makes one an idolator and sinner; knowing God leads to immortality. Wisdom is apportioned to the righteous, God acts graciously toward those who seek him and turn to him in repentance, and it is the “righteous,” “holy” people of God whom he acts to

\(^{182}\) The people appear to have remained the holy people despite their need for discipline: perfection, or at least righteousness, entails a correct response to discipline.

\(^{183}\) In 12:26 the reader is warned that those who ignore “mild rebukes will experience the deserved judgment of God.” Winston, “Wisdom in Wisdom,” 161, speculates that “the author of the Wisdom of Solomon may have anticipated the interpretation known to us from later times from R. Simeon b. Lakish’s comment on Exod 10:1 that ‘when God warns a man once, twice, and even a third time, and he still does not repent, then does God close his heart against repentance so that he shall exact vengeance from him for his sins’ (Exod. Rak. 13.3).”

\(^{184}\) Ibid., 161, notes “The Canaanites are a special case, claims Amir, since the author is clearly referring to their condition of being accursed from the very first as specified in Gen 9:25.” Thus the author can claim both that God loves all of his creation (11:24) and also recognize that the Canaanites will never repent because their wickedness is too inborn.

\(^{185}\) An interpretive crux for Jas. 1:21.
defend and even chastises in order to preserve them unto eternity. By contrast, the wicked—as the only other group pictured—justly receive God’s judgment of death and fail to attain immortality.\(^{186}\)

**D. 4QInstruction**\(^{187}\)

This text serves as the example from the diversity of the Dead Sea Scrolls. Harrington argues, “the Qumran wisdom writings were part of larger post-exilic Jewish movements toward collecting and codifying Israel’s wisdom during the so-called Second Temple period.”\(^{188}\) A well attested wisdom text,\(^{189}\) 4QInstruction has only survived in what Goff calls “tattered remnants,”\(^{190}\) a reality which makes discerning the theology of the whole difficult. Describing the work, Harrington comments:

This Qumran sapiential work is a wisdom instruction expressed in small units and put together without much apparent concern for logical or thematic progression. In form and content it is similar to Sirach, parts of Proverbs (especially 22:17-24:22), late Egyptian wisdom writings, Jesus’ instructions in the Synoptic Gospels, and the letter of James. . . . the work presupposes a secular or non-‘monastic’ setting. The one being instructed engages in business, has dealings with all kinds of people, and may marry a wife and have children.\(^{191}\)

The possibility that this text was intended for a broader audience opens the chance that this wisdom text held wider appeal beyond the sectarian community that preserved it. This

---

\(^{186}\) Collins, “The Mysteries of God,” 292, observes, “Wisdom does not refer to any punishment of the wicked after death; it appears that they simply cease to exist.”


\(^{188}\) Harrington, *Wisdom Texts*, 7. He sees Proverbs and Sirach as providing clear contribution to this text in vocabulary, structure, and some themes, and also finds 1 Enoch essential particularly for understanding the theodicy and esoteric character of 4QInstruction (pp. 9-11). Of the Wisdom of Solomon, he states “That work reflects the cosmopolitan atmosphere of Alexandria in Egypt in the first century. . . . There is nothing like this at Qumran” (13). In contrast, Collins, “The Mysteries of God,” 291, sees commonalities between this text and Wisdom: “There are some clear points of analogy between the 7776 177 in the text from Qumran and the mysteries of God in the Wisdom of Solomon. In both texts, understanding the mystery is the key to right behavior. This is so primarily because it discloses the ultimate outcome of righteous or wicked behavior—the reward of piety and the prize of blameless souls, in the idiom of Wisdom, or ‘who is to inherit glory and iniquity’ in the phrase of 4Q Instruction.”

\(^{189}\) Matthew J. Goff, *The Worldly and Heavenly Wisdom of 4QInstruction* (Leiden: Brill, 2003), 1, affirms “at least six copies of 4QInstruction were found at Qumran.” See also Ibid., “The Mystery of Creation in 4QInstruction,” DSD 10 (2003), 163-86.

\(^{190}\) Ibid., 3.


52
text, oriented toward life in the world, presents us with a complex audience in the Judean area of the first century BCE, thereby potentially giving us a close textual cousin to James in worldview, theology, and language.

1. The Word and The Law

4QInstruction does not reference הָלְבָּם, instead placing a strong emphasis on the הָלְבָּם, the exact identity of which remains a mystery. Much like the Torah elsewhere, this הָלְבָּם is to be studied, meditated upon and obeyed, while the content apparently covers eschatological topics such as creation and judgment. This emphasis on a mystery that has been revealed creates an interesting tension with traditional wisdom instruction, causing Harrington to defend 4QInstruction as “a wisdom instruction with apocalyptic features . . . 4QInstruction presents wisdom in an apocalyptic framework.” Throughout the whole, the הָלְבָּם provides the hidden revelation of God to those who choose to dedicate themselves to its study.

---

192 Goff, *Worldly and Heavenly Wisdom*, 1, presents the various conclusions of Cross, Strugnell, Collins, and Elgvin for dating.

193 Blenkinsopp, “Interpretation and Sectarianism,” 25 comments, “Both the Qumran community and early Christianity, on which alone we are reasonably well informed, appear to have thought of themselves, if not as the ‘true Israel’ in an absolutely exclusive sense, then at least as the nucleus of the Israel of the last days which God was preparing even then to inaugurate.”

194 Daniel J. Harrington, “The הָלְבָּם הָיֵה in a Qumran Wisdom Text (1Q26, 4Q415-418, 423),” *RevQ* 17 (1996), 350, states, “The expression הָלְבָּם הָיֵה occurs about thirty times (including reconstructions) in the sapiential work represented by 1Q26 and 4Q415-418, 423. It is so frequent and so regular in the work that when we find either word alone and need to fill in a lacuna, we can add the missing word with some confidence.” He later adds, “We may be able to get some idea of the content of the הָלְבָּם הָיֵה by attending to some of its parallel expressions. . . . It appears that the הָלְבָּם הָיֵה is associated with the knowledge of righteousness and iniquity,” while some of the parallels “suggest an eschatological dimension” (352).

195 E.g., 4Q416 2 iii 9 (par 4Q418 9 8); 4Q417 1 ii 18 (par 4Q418 43 16).

196 E.g., 4Q417 1 ii 8 (par 4Q418 43 6); 4Q418 77 2-4.

197 Daniel J. Harrington, “Wisdom and Apocalyptic in 4QInstruction and 4 Ezra,” in *Wisdom and Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls and in the Biblical Tradition*, ed. F. García Martinez (Leuven: Leuven University Press, 2003), 335. This, in defence from Goff, *Worldly and Heavenly Wisdom*, 51, who argues “The epistemology of 4QInstruction is closer to that of apocalypticism than biblical wisdom. In this text wisdom is acquired through the contemplation of revealed mysteries rather than from knowledge the addressee can acquire on his own.” Elgvin, “Wisdom and Apocalypticism,” 226, suggests “that the composition represents a conflation of two literary layers: (1) an older layer of admonitions advocating traditional sapiential viewpoints, and (2) a younger, more apocalyptic layer consisting of longer discourses,” dating “the second layer to the mid-second century BCE.” This separation of layers, however, does not seem necessary.

198 Bennema, “Strands of Wisdom Tradition,” 78, sees Qumran as a slightly independent wisdom tradition: “in the Qumran community charismatic exegesis—the Spirit-inspired interpretation of the true meaning of
4Q17 1 i 8-9 gives us an example of the creational aspect of the נְזֵרָה, using the language of creation in relation to themes of wisdom and truth:

לָקַח אֶל וַתֵּעָקֵד בָּהּ שָמָע בָּהּ נְזֵרָה
לְחָמַת אָשֶׁר תָּמַשׁ֑ת. לַקְּלָלָה הַמַּעֲלָה לְאָשֶׁר נְזֵרָה
לְמַעַלָּה מְעָלָה

. . . For the God of knowledge is the foundation of truth And by/on the mystery that is to come
He has laid out its (= truth’s) foundation, And its deeds [He has prepared with all wisdom]
And with all crafting has He fashioned it, And the domain of its deeds (creatures)

Here, the more traditional creation language associated with Wisdom in wisdom instruction texts has given way to less clear terms. For the author(s) of 4QInstruction, it is now this “mystery that is to be/come” that is the essential teacher for how to live, bringing together creation and judgment. Harrington notes that “if fragment 1 of 4Q416 is indeed the beginning of the great sapiential instruction, then it must have provided the theological perspective in which the sage’s advice on various issues was to be interpreted.” Wisdom and Torah have been replaced by revealed mystery, which claims superiority to that which was earlier revealed. The author(s) link the creation order of the world with the legal, judgment order, all contained within one mystery which, like the Torah in Sirach, the wise individual will study.

2. Faith and Works

As any wisdom instruction, how one lives is essential. Goff argues that the community is united by a common poverty rather than by “theological disputes or by

the Torah—is the hermeneutical key to reveal this saving wisdom. . . . Nevertheless, salvation within the Qumran community is, as in the Torah-centred wisdom tradition, also based on human effort: one needs to study and observe the Torah (1QS 5:7-10), and to observe the disciplines of the community (1:QS 5-7).”

199 This parallels James’ language in 1:18 of birth by the word of truth. Whereas James seems to conflate λόγος and νόμος, however, his creational language has ties to legal language and fits within context of wisdom instruction.
201 Harrington, Wisdom Texts, 41.
202 Contra Lange (as cited in Goff, Worldly and Heavenly Wisdom, 70, 72), who sees the mystery as compatible with the Torah in contemporary understanding. Although it may be a similar ordering principle for the world, the נְזֵרָה in these texts is the creation tool and the standard by which the world will be judged, not one that parallels a previously given legal code and revelation.
203 This sort of link helps to support James’ connection of the creative, “birthing” Word with the Law that governs behavior. Likewise this text’s consistent emphasis upon gazing and meditating upon the נְזֵרָה parallels James’ παρακύψας and παραμενών upon the perfect law.
oppression from foreign rulers. Harrington concurs: “The poverty spoken about . . . does not seem to be a spiritual ideal. . . . Rather, it reflects the realities of life in the world for those who (wisely) pursue higher goals and serves as a symbol for the limitations inherent in the human condition.” The author’s concern, then, is a religious life in the context of poverty. The audience’s trials range from struggling with a proper handling of finances to a proper understanding of humility. The text deals with spouses, debt, oaths, and parents, prescribing a faithful way of life while consistently pointing toward the Torah as the guide. “Faith” as a more abstract concept does not appear to focus in the text, but instead the faithful will study the Torah and obey it in their daily life situations.

Following a series of instructions including care for one’s oaths (8), obeying the commands (8-9), avoiding enviousness (11), serving one’s master faithfully (12-16), urging one’s service “in spirit” but not selling oneself as a slave (16-18), 4Q416 2 ii ends with a section recognizing the audience’s poverty and teaching them how to live within it (18c-21a):

\[
\text{... do not sate thyself with food when there is no clothing, And do not drink wine when there is no food. Do not seek after delicacies when thou lackest (even) bread. Do not esteem thyself highly for thy poverty when thou art (anyhow?) a pauper, Lest thou bring into contempt thy (own way) of life.}
\]

While the text to this point has been very concerned that its audience members not indebt themselves to others, this passage provides very practical methods of living within one’s means, varied as those means may be. In many ways, this section functions as a warning against a pretension that leads to debt. Intriguingly, however, it also functions as a rare

---

204 Goff, *Worldly and Heavenly Wisdom*, 229.
warning against pride in being poor. While wisdom literature often condemns the rich for wrongful means of becoming wealthy, here the warning is to humility in poverty because in itself it is not a state of virtue. Honor, instead, always goes to God who “glorifies” the poor and “lifts up” their heads from poverty (4Q416 2 iii 10c-11). Goff argues that in 4QInstruction:

poverty is used in different ways. It often refers to the material poverty of the addressee. The declaration that he has been lifted out of poverty is a metaphor for his elect status. The addressee is poor but his elect status is portrayed as a form of wealth. The depiction of the addressee’s elect status as a type of wealth explains why 4QInstruction exhibits none of the hatred for the rich that is characteristic of the Epistle of Enoch... The ‘you are poor’ refrain is also employed to discourage boasting.

Because of their election, the poor are neither subservient to or in competition with the wealthy. Boasting, however, either in poverty or election is forbidden.

Meanwhile, in context of immersing oneself in the study of the הֵיהָנָן, 4Q417 1 i 6b-8a reveals the result of examination:

And then thou shalt know truth and iniquity, wisdom [and foolishness] thou shalt recognize, every act in all their ways, Together with their punishment(s) in all ages everlasting, And the punishment of eternity. Then thou shalt discern between the [good] and [evil according to their] deeds.

The direct result of meditating upon the הֵיהָנָן is the individual’s ability to see the difference between good and evil actions and to distinguish between good and evil people based on their deeds (and by default understand their eternal punishment).

The theme of knowing right and wrong continues. First the audience is encouraged to understand “how he should walk[perfect in all] his [actions]” (4Q417 1 i 206 This follows with the warning: “do not say, ‘I am needy, And I will not study (?) knowledge. Bring thy shoulder under all instruction” (4Q416 2 iii 12c-13a). Unlike Sirach, which views study as the wealthier person’s prerogative, 4QInstruction sees the study of the הֵיהָנָן as each person’s responsibility.

207 Goff, Worldly and Heavenly Wisdom, 151. He later concludes, “The addressee is not angry at the wealthy because he is promised eschatological rewards that are more valuable than anything possessed by the rich” (229), suggestive of Jas. 1:9-11 and the overturning there.
“for every one who is contaminated with evil-doing shall not be treated as guiltless” (4Q417 1 i 23b-24a). Sins are like a moral stain that contaminates the person. Acting in defiance of the "ד"ה"ר" leads to accountability, for they will be neither “unpunished” nor considered “clean,” and as such will be accountable not only to God but also to the community as outside the accepted bounds for behavior.

Regarding speech-ethics, 4Q417 2 i (par. 4Q416 2 i) 1-4a deals with the proper ways for rebuking or responding to various people, but ends with the injunction: do not overlook thy own sins. In the midst of commands regarding reproving or forgiving others, this caution stands out. All speech is to be done from the perspective of humility that does not ignore one’s own shortcomings (reiterated in 4Q417 2 i 14 in context of judging the poor). The author encourages humility so strongly because contextually he is moving to the awareness of God’s sovereign judgment and the need for humility before Him. Goff notes that “the humility that 4QInstruction recommends is associated with poverty. This is . . . emphasized by the word יֵלֶךְ itself, which can refer to both poverty and humility.”

Despite the addressee’s sinful nature, acting according to the ethics of humility and poverty can help to spare one from judgment.

3. Judgment and Mercy

“4QInstruction teaches that everyone will be judged. This is used as an incentive for the addressee to be ethical.” Facing judgment, the addressee can hope for a positive outcome by studying and living according to the "ד"ה"ר". “Mercy” is given to all of

---

209ela חֲמָרָה יֵלֶךְ... 
210 Catherine M. Murphy, Wealth in the Dead Sea Scrolls and the Qumran Community (Leiden: Brill, 2002), 175, views this section as teaching how one should relate to nobles, but Goff, Worldly and Heavenly Wisdom, 151 fn. 99, does not find her arguments convincing.
211 Harrington, Wisdom Texts, 55. This is the only place he highlights a wisdom text focusing on judgment, one which “may reflect the integration of prophetic/eschatological material into the wisdom tradition.”
212 Goff, Worldly and Heavenly Wisdom, 163.
213 Ibid., 204.
humanity, to sustain life, while “judgment” relates to the condemnation of the wicked while the righteous are able to “stand” before God.

Beginning this picture, 4Q416 1 10 (par. 4Q418 1), states:

מַלְשֹׁם שָׁמְרָה עָלָיוָ֖ו עַבְדוֹת רֵשֶׁת בָּלָֽו בָּנָֽו אָמֶֽה יַרְצִי לָ֖ו...

From Heaven He shall pronounce judgment upon the work of wickedness, But all His faithful Children will be accepted with favour by [Him…

While the following verses continue this train of thought, warning against the “dread” those under God’s judgment will feel and promising a future age of perfection after iniquity is judged and destroyed, this line is simplest, spelling out the dichotomy between the judgment the wicked have earned by their works and the acceptance (mercy?) granted the faithful. The chosen faithful here are most likely those within the community who obey the laws of the community,\(^{214}\) following the ordered nature of creation (4Q416 1 2-8).\(^{215}\) Regardless, when God enacts justice, judgment and salvation are the opposing results (see again 4Q418 126.ii.6-8).

In contrast with this future judgment, mercy appears in 4Q416 2 ii 1 (par 4Q417 2 ii+23), which presents God’s natural mercy to all people. Picking up the “for He” from the previous column, column two continues:

בִּכְלֵלָא בָּכָלָא [סֶגֶר אֲמוֹת וֹלָדָה מַלַּח] // סֶגֶר רַחְלָם [לִבְּשַׁי יַד אֲמוֹת] // לִבְּשַׁי יַד אֲמוֹת

For He // has unloosed [His] merc[ies toward every man] So as to fill up all the deficiencies of His secrets, And to give food to all that lives, And there is no one who will die of hunger.

\(^{214}\) John Kampen, “‘Righteousness’ in Matthew and the Legal Texts from Qumran,” in Legal Texts and Legal Issues: Proceedings of the Second Meeting of the International Organization for Qumran Studies Cambridge 1995, ed. Moshe Bernstein, Florentino García Martínez and John Kampen (Leiden: Brill, 1997), 479, argues regarding the terms קדושה and חסד in the Qumran literature that “the difference may not be simply a matter of a ‘stricter standard,’ but rather the significance of belonging to a particular ‘chosen’ group, which has exclusive claim to the ‘way of righteousness.’ This is a very different usage than the emerging definition in Tannaitic literature, which relates the word group more directly to the usage of חסד דֵאֶֽרֶךְ as almsgiving and קדושה דֵאֶֽרֶךְ to mean ‘mercy.’ In Qumran literature we rather see that they are directly related to the group’s sectarian identity.”

\(^{215}\) Walter Grundmann, “The Teacher of Righteousness of Qumran and the Question of Justification by Faith in the Theology of the Apostle Paul,” in Paul and Qumran: Studies in New Testament Exegesis, ed. Jerome Murphy-O’Connor (London: Chapman, 1968), 98, posits, “the brotherhood of Qumran received from the Teacher of Righteousness a rule in which a very strict interpretation of the Torah is given, and a conscientious attitude towards the Torah is encouraged and put into practice. . . . Salvation is won by faithful adherence to his person and teaching, by the suffering which the Teacher’s followers endure, probably because of this fidelity, and by accomplishment of the Torah.”
The author defines the “mercies” of the Lord in terms of God feeding everything that lives, enabling life to continue. This “mercy” bears no relation to the contrast of judgment and salvation but instead functions as a general term for God sustaining the world in an orderly fashion so that wisdom can function. This example illustrates the complete dependence of all creation on God’s mercy and implies humanity’s responsibility toward God in response.

4Q416 3 3-5 appear to deal with the promised time when wickedness is ultimately judged and wiped out, consoling the readers in the midst of trials of God’s loving nature.

The author praises God that there will be a time when wickedness will end and that, seemingly despite “affliction” in the current age, God’s people do not perish because they are the recipients of his mercy. The judgment, however, is “effective throughout history,” thereby explaining why there is “wrath in every period.” This text also pairs the recognition of God coming in wrath and judgment with the promise that he is compassionate and merciful. The threat of judgment thus doubles as encouragement to the righteous.

As seen above, 4Q417 2 i 14-16 (par 4Q416 2 i) reminds the reader not to “overlook thy own [sins],” but to seek justice. What follows in lines 15-16 is the crucial motivating factor for obedience:

216 Goff, Worldly and Heavenly Wisdom, 190, while recognizing that 4Q416 4 1 “discusses judgment as coming in one ‘period of wrath.’”
The author here acknowledges that without God’s forgiveness, every human is helpless before his judgment. Therefore while some lines appear to demand complete righteousness, those are tempered by ones like this that acknowledge every person’s need for forgiveness. Obedience in just judging, particularly as relates to the poor, however, is crucial for how one stands before God in that time of judgment. Merciful judgment as a human apparently aids in abating God’s anger. This passage also warns for humility before God in his judgment as every person exists in a state of condemnation and one can only “stand” before him because he forgives.

While some of the other fragments are enticing, with words or phrases such as “righteous deeds” and “judgment” appearing, without context one cannot say to what those phrases apply, thus making them less helpful. But on the whole 4QInstruction reveals typical wisdom patterns wherein obedience to God’s law is rewarded by his approbation while disobedience brings condemnation and destruction. While occasional references to election are made, which could lead to understanding that the authors viewed themselves as an elect community and therefore warranting God’s mercy, the basic pattern remains categorical for the “righteous” and “wicked.”

E. OTHER WISDOM: EPISTLE OF ENOCH, PSEUDO-PHOCYLIDES, 4 MACCABEES

These three texts are grouped together largely for reasons of space. While each has something to offer to the discussion, no one in particular needs a full-length discussion.

---

217 4QInstruction offered the most sustained theology to be examined. Other texts, such as the Book of Mysteries and the Treatise on the Two Spirits, do not significantly move this discussion forward, revealing the same dichotomy between the righteous and the wicked where the latter are the recipients of God’s judgment (cf. 1Q27 1.1-6; 4Q299 59.2-4; 1QS IV.12-14). Grundmann, “Teacher of Righteousness,” 96, notes, “In the Hymns of Thanksgiving man’s justice and God’s mercy are directly linked” (cf. 1QH 13:16-17).

Regarding the Scrolls more generally, Yinger, Paul, Judaism, 138, concludes, “Divine judgment according to deeds did not amount to a future (and currently unknowable) determination as to whether one had measured up. It was rather the inevitable sentence upon those who had distained God and his ways as revealed in the sect. . . . Thus for believers there would, in one sense, be no eschatological judgment (= punishment) according to deeds, at least as long as they remained faithfully within the sect and its way of life. . . . Salvation, while already assured to the sectary on the basis of grace and the covenant, had not yet arrived in its eschatological fulfillment, and thus would only be experienced in that Eschaton if one remained in that grace and covenantal relationship.”

The Epistle of Enoch is comprised of 1 Enoch 91-107, or alternatively 92-105, with chapter 91 functioning as a narrative bridge and 106-107 as an appendix regarding Noah’s birth. The suggested date for this text ranges from 200 BCE to 50 CE. The Epistle provides us with what is perhaps the quintessential example of apocalyptic wisdom wherein right living is grounded in illustrations of future rewards or punishment. Pseudo-Phocylides, most closely estimated as between 30 B.C. and 40 C.E., provides much more traditional-style wisdom. Evans notes the contrast between stated and likely authorship: “The author of this poem claims to be Phocylides, an Ionic poet who lived in Miletus in the sixth century B.C.E. The real author was likely a Jew who wished to show that Jewish ethics had been taught long ago by a respected gentile ethicist.” In contrast yet again, 4 Maccabees, most likely from the first century C.E., “is a philosophical treatise that attempts to show in terms of Greek philosophy that the Jewish faith is the true religion. The book teaches that martyrdom is a substitutionary atonement that expiates the sins of the nations (1:11; 6:27-29. . . ; 17:21; 18:14).” The text uses the martyrdoms of Eleazar as well as the family of seven sons to teach the value of reason and self-control, as well as the need for righteous

Pseudepigrapha are not primarily important because they are cited by the New Testament authors; they are significant because they reveal the Zeitgeist of Early Judaism and the matrix of earliest Christianity.”

Nickelsburg and VanderKam, 1 Enoch, 10-12, support the latter grouping. For our purposes here, chapters 92-93 will not be included in the discussion, as 92 is an introduction and 93 is the Apocalypse of Weeks. Chapter 94, where the two ways instruction begins, shall mark our functional start to the Epistle.

Evans, Ancient Texts, 29. James Davila, “The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha as Background to the New Testament,” ExpT 117 (2006), 56, has concluded that the Epistle of Enoch “can be shown to be Jewish on external grounds” and thus “fair game as Jewish background to the New Testament.”

Kampen, “’Righteousness’ in Matthew,” 478, observes, “Of the various sections which make up 1 Enoch, the final Epistle has the strongest sectarian orientation. Here ‘the wise’ and ‘the righteous’ are both appellations used to describe those of the author’s own persuasion, continuing the identification through the section already proposed concerning the Apocalypse of Weeks. . . . There is, however, strong evidence to indicate the manner in which ‘the righteous’ and ‘righteousness’ are again used to indicate a sectarian way of life and its adherents.”


Evans, Ancient Texts, 56.

Anderson, “4 Maccabees,” 534. This text is the source for the translations of 4 Maccabees.

Evans, Ancient Texts, 55.
obedience to the Law despite persecution. These three texts provide examples of the various applications of wisdom to the thought world of the first century C.E., and so can help to broaden our perceptions of the various paths wisdom literature took in defining the righteous life.

1. The Word and The Law

The eleven uses of λόγος in the Epistle of Enoch\textsuperscript{227} reveal a theological undertone to the term. While most refer to speech of some sort, there is a clear distinction between the “words of the righteous” which may be equated to more general wisdom writing, or more particularly to the words of Enoch or the plot-filled speech of the wicked. Three uses of λόγος (97:6; 99:10; 100:9) relate to speech/works and so will be considered in the “faith and works” section. The Epistle does not use νόμος once (nor does 1 Enoch), and the one use of ἐντολή in 99:10 again belongs under the “works” section. Instead, we will see that the author(s) view the teaching in 1 Enoch to be the content for knowing God’s will.\textsuperscript{228}

The section from 98:9-99:2 contains eight “woes,” each directed against those who fail in various ways: the fools, the stiff-necked, those “who love deeds of iniquity” (v. 12), but the final verses deal with false words. In 98:14-15, there are two separate woes:

\begin{quote}
ουί ἐμὴ δολομένοι ἀκυρῶσαι τοὺς λόγους τῶν δικαίων· οὐ μὴ γενήσαι ἐμὴ ἐπί τοὺς σωτηρίας· οὐί ἐμὴ οἱ γράφωντες λόγους ἰσείς καὶ λόγους πλανήσεσαι· αὐτοὶ γράφουσι καὶ πολλοὺς ἀποπλανήσουσιν τοὺς παρθένους αὐτῶν·
\end{quote}

woe to you who annul the words of the righteous; you will have no hope of salvation. Woe to those who write lying words and words of error; they write and lead many astray with their lies when they hear them.

\textsuperscript{226} Davila, “Old Testament Pseudepigrapha,” 56, determines this text to be “Jewish beyond reasonable doubt (mainly on internal criteria),” but warns, “One should perhaps be somewhat more cautious about using these for New Testament background, since they may be considerably later than the New Testament writings. But they certainly give us valuable firsthand information about Judaism in the Hellenistic period or the first few centuries C.E.”

\textsuperscript{227} “Translations for 1 Enoch are taken from Nickelsburg and VanderKam, 1 Enoch.”

\textsuperscript{228} Bennema, “Strands of Wisdom Tradition,” 75, calls this text a prime example of apocalyptic wisdom. Here “Wisdom leads to right ethical conduct, righteousness and (eschatological) salvation/eternal life (5:8-9; 37:4; 48:1); to accept the words of wisdom is to follow Yahweh’s way, which is the way of righteousness toward (eschatological) salvation (99:10). Moreover, those who have gained wisdom will become a source of wisdom themselves (82:2-3; 104:12-105:1).”
The first woe stands against those who actively twist the words of revelation. By changing the “words,” they bring condemnation upon themselves. Presumably these “words of the righteous” are either specifically the teaching in 1 Enoch or the approved body of wisdom literature (τῶν δικαίων being plural, it most likely does not refer solely to Enoch).

Likewise in verse 15 are those who are actively involved in leading people astray with their words—doubly described as lying words and straying words. Argall notes, “The addresses in the oracles are characterized as rival sages and teachers who do not accept Enochic wisdom (98:9, 14; 99:2) and who lead others astray (98:15).” These contrary wisdom teachers, among whom Argall counts Sirach, face destruction for their dual crimes of misrepresenting the content of the words of Enoch and teaching a wrong content of their own.

The “woe” in 99:2 links λόγοι and the διαθήκη, where the latter further defines the former: “Woe to you who alter the true words (τοὺς λόγους τοὺς ἀληθινοὺς) and pervert the everlasting covenant (τὴν αἰώνιον διαθήκην) and consider yourselves to be without sin.” Again condemning other wisdom teachers outside the Enochic school, the “words” here are the true teaching of Israel’s covenant. By “altering” the words in their own presentation, these teachers pervert the covenant itself. Argall notes, “The rival interpreters of Torah have hopes for good things because they consider themselves observant Jews (99:2c). . . . What the opponents least expect will happen to them.”

We see these links between false teaching and condemnation again in 104:9 in the concluding statements of the epistle: “Do not err (πλανᾶσθε) in your hearts or lie (ψεύδεσθε), or alter the words of truth (τοὺς λόγους τῆς ἀληθείας), or falsify the words of the Holy One (τῶν λόγων τοῦ ἀγίου), or give praise to your errors. For it is

---

229 Argall, 1 Enoch and Sirach, 181.
230 Cf. the warning in Jas. 3:1 of the accountability teachers must be ready to face for misleading others.
231 Argall, 1 Enoch and Sirach, 206, adding, “this author regards them as false teachers and states that the Day of the Lord will dash their hopes of salvation.”
not to righteousness (σὸν . . . εἰς δίκαιομα) that all your lies and all your error lead, but
to great sin (πλάνη).” Here the author first encourages his hearers to proper obedience.
He quickly changes direction, however, warning them against either twisting the words of
Enoch (v. 11) themselves or following those who do so. Again, more than mere speech,
the “words” are the full content of the teaching of Enoch in opposition, potentially, to the
teaching of Sirach.233

Ultimately, the Epistle of Enoch calls for a commitment to its teaching as the only
method of salvation (100:6): “And the wise among men will see the truth, and the sons of
the earth will contemplate these words of this epistle (ἐπὶ τῶν λόγων τούτων τῆς
ἐπιστολῆς), and they will recognize that their wealth cannot save them when iniquity
collapses.” The only thing able to save a person is obedience to the words of this wisdom
school. The “words of this epistle,” warning of judgment for those outside the community
and encouraging endurance in the righteous, stand in opposition to other teachings and
demand wholehearted commitment.234

As with the Epistle of Enoch, Pseudo-Phocylides mentions neither νόμος nor
ἐντολή. There are, however, four uses of λόγος in Pseudo-Phocylides, two referring to
wise versus foolish or hasty speech (20; 124), and one in the caution that speech (λόγος)
is the main weapon that humans have (128).235 This latter section is concerned with the
intersection of speech and wisdom, for the author states that God has given all the animals
various weapons as a “natural” (ἐμφυτός) means of defense, but given “reason” (λόγος)
to humans for their protection. In contrast to humanity’s harsh speech, the author

233 Argall, 1 Enoch and Sirach, 96-97. See also the textual variant of 106:13, generally considered outside of the
epistle, wherein the author warns, “in the generation of Jared, my father, they transgressed the word of the
Lord/the covenant of heaven (παρεβησαν τὸν λόγον κυρίου ἀπὸ τῆς διαθήκης τοῦ οὐρανοῦ).” Again
we see a potential link between the “word of the Lord” and his “covenant” with Israel.
234 The final reference to λόγος, depending on whether one includes the final chapters of 1 Enoch in the
Epistle, refers specifically to the “words of Enoch” in 107:3. The content, while allusive of other, secret
revelations of Enoch, refers in this context to Enoch’s words to Lamech regarding his son, Noah.
235 This line has the second use of ἐμφυτός we have seen, again bearing the meaning innate from creation,
cf. Jas 1:21. This text is concerned with the intersection of speech and wisdom, however, and in its
relationship to the λόγος fits better with James 3 and the message of controlling one’s tongue.
observes in 129: “But the speech of God breathed wisdom is better (τῆς δὲ θεοπνεύστου σοφίς λόγου ἐστὶν ἀριστος).” This strengthens the link between wisdom and λόγος.

Instead of speech as a weapon, one’s words can be controlled and guided by God’s wisdom, thus the tongue is controlled either by one’s base nature (i.e., equivalent to the weapons of other animals) or divinely led and instructed.

Λόγος appears fifteen times in 4 Maccabees, generally referring to “reason.” This text purports to be a defense of reason and presents the λόγος as something that holds one steady in obedience to the Law regardless of circumstances. As the book draws to a close, in 16:24 the author gives a summary of the speech (τούτων τῶν λόγων) the mother gave to her seven sons in which she “encouraged and persuaded each of her sons to die rather than violate God’s commandment (ἡ παραβήναι τὴν ἐντολὴν τοῦ θεοῦ).” Her words are challenges, demanding obedience and reminding them of their commitment to the Law. Although this is a general reference to speech, it is the only use of λόγος in 4 Maccabees that does not refer to reason. Also, it links λόγος, commands, and obedience. Convinced by her words, her sons hold fast to the commandments and endure torture and death.

Fourth Maccabees uses νόμος 38 times but with the very consistent referent of the Law of Moses in its entirety. For example, the author mentions the command against certain types of food (1:34) but also the command against coveting (2:5-6, 8-9), love of parents (2:10), and even how to deal justly with a conquered enemy (2:14). This helps establish that when the author refers to the “law,” he means the Deuteronomistic

---

236 Blenkinsopp, “Interpretation and Sectarianism,” 20, referring to texts from this time period, particularly Chronicles, notes: “It has been a commonplace of Old Testament theologies and histories of the religion of Israel since Wellhausen to view increasing emphasis on Law as a symptom of decline in the Second Temple period. . . . it is pertinent to note the emphasis in our sources, and especially in the Chronicler, on *making covenants with the purpose of renewing fidelity to the law*” (emphasis mine). He argues that this leads to increasing sectarianism.
law in its entirety. He also links the study of the law with wisdom, which he defines as “knowledge of divine and human matters” (1:16). He continues in 1:17: “This (αὐτη), in turn, is education in the law (τοῦ νόμου), by which we learn divine matters reverently and human affairs to our advantage.” The αὐτη refers back to the σοφία of 1:15 and 16: the law teaches wisdom and reveals the proper responses to the divine and human categories.

Fourth Maccabees 2:21 reveals that “when God fashioned humans, he planted in them (περιεφύτευσεν) emotions and inclinations.” Although emotions are natural, the mind was created by God to rule and direct us: “to [the mind] he gave the law” (καὶ τοῦτῳ νόμῳ ἔδωκεν). This reveals a confidence in humanity’s innate rationality by which each guides and controls his or her emotions and actions.

The subsequent references to νόμος come in dialogue between Antiochus and Eleazar or the seven brothers. Eleazar calls the law the “divine law” (θεῖῷ νόμῳ, 5:16; cf. 6:21; 9:15; 11:27) and refuses to bend concerning the keeping of the law (τοῦ φυλάξαι τοῦ νόμου, 5:29). His steadfastness in the law, even to death by torture, earns him the epithet, “Man in sympathy with the law and philosopher of the divine life” (ὡς σύμφωνε νόμου καὶ φιλόσοφε θείου βίου, 7:7). In a book in praise of reason, to be called “a philosopher of the divine life” is a noble title. The seven brothers continue in their faithfulness in “ready obedience to the law and to Moses our counselor” (τῇ τοῦ νόμου εὐπειθείᾳ καὶ συμβούλῳ Μωυσεὶ χρησάμεθα, 9:2). Again, this affirms the identification of the Mosaic law in 4 Maccabees, but it also reminds us that, while Moses is the mediator of the law, the law itself is divine and therefore demands and deserves obedience.

237 Bennema, “Strands of Wisdom Tradition,” 70, argues, “In 4 Maccabees wisdom is associated with Torah; the Torah is the locus of wisdom, and through the study and observance of the Torah one acquires wisdom (1:15-17).”

238 In both the περιεφύτευσεν of 4 Macc. 2:21 and the ἐμφυτος in Ps-Phocylides 128, the propensity to sin or be guided by reason are from birth, an innate part of a person’s make up.
2. Faith and Works

In the Epistle of Enoch, “faith” appears as confidence in God’s justice, trust that he will vindicate the righteous and punish the wicked. One interesting example of this occurs in the Ethiopian translation of 97:1. Nickelsburg and VanderKam translate it: “<Take courage>, O righteous; for the sinners will become an object of contempt, and they will be destroyed on the day of iniquity.” They note in a footnote, however, that the Ethiopian text varies regarding “take courage”: “Eth have faith, a normal translation of take courage in Eth NT. Cf. below 102:4; 104:2.”

Faith, confidence in God’s character, is a basis for courage, and wise courage derives assurance from God’s faithfulness. The discourse in 102:4-103:4 supports this picture, for the righteous—even those who have died—are told to “fear not” and “take courage” because of God’s faithfulness and the reality that even death is not the end for the righteous (cf. 103:4). No where in the epistle (or the entirety of 1 Enoch) do the terms πίστις or πιστός appear, while the verb πιστεύω appears once in 104:13 in the conclusion of the epistle, assuring that Enoch’s words will be believed by the righteous and be of encouragement to them. Here “belief” is in the content and trustworthiness of Enoch’s visions.

In contrast to the assurance of faith, the Epistle of Enoch warns of the listing of each person’s deeds at the time of judgment—deeds usually are reason for judgment. In this context, εργον overlaps with λόγος. For instance, in 97:6, λόγοι refers to a sum account of one’s deeds read at the time of judgment:

... καὶ ἀναγνωσθήσονται πάντες οἱ λόγοι τῶν ἀνομίων ὡμῶν ἐν ὑπίσχει τοῦ μεγάλου ἁγίου κατὰ πρόσωπον ὡμῶν· εἴτε ἀναφέλει τὰ πάντα ἐργα τὰ μετασχόντα ἐν τῇ ἀνομίᾳ.

239 Nickelsburg and VanderKam, 1 Enoch, 147, fn. h. See also Michael A. Knibb, The Ethiopic Book of Enoch: A New Edition in the Light of the Aramaic Dead Sea Fragments. Vol 2: Introduction, Translation and Commentary (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1978), 299, who translates this as “Believe, you righteous, that the sinners will come an object of shame and will be destroyed on the day of iniquity.”

240 Gabriele Boccaccini, “Qumran and the Enoch Groups,” in The Hebrew Bible and Qumran, ed. James H. Charlesworth (Richland Hills, Tex.: Bibal Press, 2000), 83, argues that the dualism in the Epistle “is transferred onto the sociological level. The chosen (the righteous and the wise) and the wicked (the sinners and the foolish) are identified respectively with the poor (and the powerless) and the rich (and powerful).”
And all the words of your lawless deeds will be read out before the Great Holy One, and your face will be "put to shame"; then he will remove all the deeds that partook (Eth: were founded in) in lawlessness.

Here the "words" present the summary of the deeds of each individual for which they will face judgment and shame, but the words are not the words of the individual. Instead the reader is given the image of a volume in which each person’s actions—right and wrong—are recorded, and the wicked will have the uselessness of their own deeds revealed before they are stricken from the book, leaving them with no defense (cf. Rev. 20:12; see again 1 En. 104:7). The use of λόγος here contrasts with the use in 100:9, in which both words and deeds are a cause for judgment: “Woe to you, all you sinners, because of the words of your mouth (ἐπὶ τοῖς λόγοις τοῦ στόματος ύμῶν) and the deeds of your hands (ἐπὶ τοῖς ἐργοῖς τῶν χειρῶν), for you have strayed from the holy deeds; in the heat of a blazing fire you will burn.”241 Here speech and deeds are paired, equal causes for judgment.242

Along with the cautionary link with “words,” proper deeds can also be understood as obedience to the commandments (99:10):

καὶ τότε μακάριοι πάντες οἱ ἄκούσαντες φρονίμων λόγους καὶ μαθήσουσιν αὐτοὺς, ποιήσασι τὰς ἑντολὰς τοῦ υψίστου, καὶ πορεύσονται ἐν ὁδοὶς δικαιοσύνης αὐτοῦ καὶ οὐ μὴ πλανήσουσιν μετὰ τῶν πλανῶντων καὶ σωθήσονται

And then the blessed ones hearing the words of the wise and learning them, doing the commands of the Most High, and proceeding in the ways of his righteousness, and not wandering with the deceivers, also will be saved.

This text again links the verb ποιέω with the commandments, leading to the conclusion that this doing is a part of why these ones are saved. They have not merely been hearers (οἱ ἄκούσαντες) of the words of the wise, but they have learned them, done them and not strayed (οὐ μὴ πλανήσουσιν) from them.

241 Cf. Jas. 2:12 with its combination of “speak and act” in anticipation of judgment.
242 This can be witnessed again in 98:9-99:2. In 98:14-15 and 99:2, the text warns of judgment for false teaching, while 99:1 warns against committing “erring acts (ποιούντες πλανήματα)" and “false deeds (τοῖς ἐργοῖς τοῖς ψευδεῖν),” for that one “will have no salvation for good (οὐκ ἔστιν ὑμῖν σωτηρία εἰς ἄγαθον).” Cf. Jas. 5:19, where the one who is in danger is described as one who πλανήθη ἀπὸ τῆς ἀληθείας.
Pseudo-Phocylides, meanwhile, offers much on how a person ought to behave, in line with wisdom teachings, but little reflection on the nature of faith. Πίστις occurs twice, both times urging that the reader be faithful or trustworthy, as in line 13 encouraging the hearer, “in everything keep faith (πίστιν δ' ἐν πᾶσι φυλάσσειν).” Line 218 discusses friendship, urging: “Love your friends until death, for faithfulness is a good thing (στέργε φίλους ἁχρις θανάτου πίστις γὰρ ἀμείνων).” Faithfulness in friendship reveals a person’s character as trustworthy. The adjective πιστός does not occur in Pseudo-Phocylides, but the verb πιστεύω appears twice, both times in warnings to be wary to trust. Line 79 warns against trusting too quickly until the whole situation is clear, while 95 warns against trusting crowds since they are notoriously wayward creatures (described as πολυτροπος). Whereas πίστις refers to being trustworthy in character, the verb is the abstract, “placing one’s trust” in something, whether a mental assent or a physical act of placing one’s life or livelihood into another’s hands. In such cases, one is warned to be wise—and cautious.

Pseudo-Phocylides gives us the least theological understanding of “works” while returning to a more Proverbs-like wisdom summary. Overarching through the text is the core principle of moderation, especially as seen in verse 69 where in eating, drinking and talking are all to be done moderately. Otherwise, the list of wise living follows the general standards. Speech remains a concern, with the entire section of 122-31 dedicated to it. The pseudographer compares the power of the tongue to the “weapons” alloted every creature (125), a weapon that can be used for damage but is also intended as “protection” (128), meant to be the tool of wisdom to guide and direct “lands and cities and ships” (131). It should not, however, be used in a boastful manner (122-23). Likewise one’s temper needs to be guarded (57, 63-64), since carelessness can lead to murder (58).

243 This line appears as an interpolation in only one MS. See James H. Charlesworth, ed., The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha, Vol. 2 (New York: Doubleday, 1985), 582.
Instead of becoming boastful, each person should remember the quickness with which life can be overturned and remain humble (116-21; cf. Jas 4:13-17). Wealth should not lead to pride (42-47, 62) but should lead one to generosity (22-29; 83) in humility. Line 109 puts wealth into perspective, reminding, “When you are rich, do not be sparing; remember that you are mortal.” Not only can one's wealth be overturned during life, the threat of mortality comes with the reminder that wealth is useless to the dead (110). One ought to practice justice (9-12, 21, 77; 137), avoid idolatry (147-49), work hard and avoid laziness (153-74), and remain sexually pure (175-206, 212-16).

Pseudo-Phocylides concludes with the reasons for all the commands given in mystery language remarkably similar to the ταύτα δικαιοσύνης μυστήρια, τοῖα βιεύντες ζωήν ἐκτελεῖται ἄγαθήν μεχρὶ γήρας οὐδού. These are the mysteries of righteousness; living thus May you live out (your) life well to the threshold of old age.

Line 228 observes that purity of the soul is more important than that of the body, reminding that the ultimate concern of this book is instruction for righteousness. Wisdom texts promise life to those who observe their instructions, and though they often define life differently, the important crux is τοῖα βιεύντες: one must “live thus.”

Fourth Maccabees presents the sovereignty of reason for controlling one’s actions and the rationality of the Jewish religion for determining those deeds. The text focuses on the example of endurance in Eleazar and in the seven brothers as they face torture and death. Reason is master over passions (παθῶν) that “are opposed to justice and courage and temperance . . . that one may not give way to them (τῶν τῆς δικαιοσύνης καὶ ἀνδρείας καὶ σωφροσύνης ἐναντίων . . . ὥστε αὐτοῖς μὴ εἶξαι; 1:6).” As with

244 For example, Argall, 1 Enoch and Sirach, 97, notes about Sirach and 1 Enoch, “The formulas and vocabulary relating the function of wisdom are remarkably similar, yet the two conceptions of life imparted by wisdom are radically different. The revealed wisdom of Enoch promises eschatological life, salvation at the final judgment (1 En 5:9). This life transcends death (81:4; 82:3). Ben Sira never speaks of life in this sense. For him, wisdom promises an improved quality of life, a happy and secure life, in the present time (Sir 4:12-13; 15:4-6; 24:22).”
Pseudo-Phocylides, 4 Maccabees promotes moderation in all things, governance by reason and endurance in commitment. Endurance makes reason evident and validates one’s faith.

The noun πίστις only appears three times, and all three are in relation to the mother of the seven sons killed by Antiochus. In 15:24, the text notes that despite witnessing the torture of her sons, “that noble mother disregarded it all because of her faith in God (τὴν πρὸς θεὸν πίστιν),” even encouraging her sons to die with the same dignity as Eleazar (16:12-23). Her faith in God led her to view life as a gift from God not to be unduly held onto. Far from intellectual assent to tenets, her faith propels her to encourage her sons to die faithfully and then throw herself on the fire. For this the author praises her in 17:2, for she “exhibited the nobility of faith (τὴν πίστεως).” Reason controlled her maternal feelings, convincing her of the rightness of the faith and dictating imitation of Israel’s heroes rather than give up the faith when faced with imminent death.245

The verb πιστεύω offers insight into the choice between trusting in God or in a ruler. Three of the five uses of the verb refer to trusting God and two to humans or institutions. Of the latter, 4:7 refers to entrusting one’s money to the Temple, a supposedly trustworthy institution that had become untrustworthy due to interference by an unbelieving king. This king urges the seven brothers not to follow Eleazar’s example in faithfulness but instead to trust in him (7:8):

\[
\text{πιστεύσατε οὖν καὶ ἀρχάς ἐπὶ τῶν ἐμῶν πραγμάτων ἡγεμονίας λημάσθη αἰνησάμενοι τὸν πατριῶν ὑμῶν τῆς πολιτείας θεοῦ.}
\]

Trust me, then, and you will have positions of authority in my government if you will renounce the ancestral tradition of your national life.246

245 Πιστός appears only in 7:15 relating that the “faithful seal of death (πιστὴ θανάτου σφραγίς)” had perfected Eleazar because he endured in faithfulness to Israel’s God despite torture.

246 This translation is from the NRSV as it better translates ΠΙΣΤΕΥΣΑΤΕ, instead of from Charlesworth, Old Testament Pseudepigrapha, 2:553, whence the others derive.
In this final use of πιστεύω, the king asks the brothers to place their futures into his hands. Such a decision, however, required the denunciation of their people and religion, a complete transference of their belief system from Yahweh to Antiochus.247

In 4 Maccabees 7:19 and 21, the rightness and rationality of Eleazar’s faith is praised. The text argues that only those who place piety as their first priority are able to conquer their passions:

πιστεύοντες ὅτι θεῶ σὺν ἀποθηκουσίν ὕσπερ οὐδὲ οἱ πατριάρχαι ἵμων Ἀβραὰμ καὶ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ Ἰακώβ ἀλλὰ ξώσιν τῷ θεῷ ἔπει τὶς πρὸς ὅλου τοῦ τῆς φιλοσοφίας κανόνα φιλοσοφῶν καὶ πεπιστευκὼς θεῷ.

... believing that to God they do not die, as our patriarchs Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob died not, but live to God. ... For what philosopher is there, who lives by the whole rule of philosophy and believes in God [who couldn’t conquer their passions].

This is the essential lesson of 4 Maccabees: true piety leads to the ability to live in moderation, to controlling the excesses of emotion and selfishness that could lead one to betray God, to confidence in God that one will not be forgotten even in death, and to assurance that death itself is not the ultimate evil. Reason based in piety defines faith and is revealed in endurance.

3. Judgment and Mercy

Each of these three texts deal differently with the idea of future judgment, in keeping with their different focuses. Pseudo-Phocylides is not concerned with the dialectic of God’s judgment and mercy, focusing instead on ethics with the sense that God will repay according to one’s deeds and thus people ought to extend mercy to one another. Pseudo-Phocylides is slightly complicated because often the declarations of judgment or reward are tied closely to the deeds of a person, making it hard to distinguish between works and rewards.

A few examples, however, are simple. Line 11 is a classic lex talionis: “If you judge evilly, subsequently God will judge you ἥν σὺ κακῶς δικάσῃς, σὲ θεὸς μετέπειτα

247 In some ways this echoes Pseudo-Phocylides’ concern that its readers be chary of giving their trust.
The κακῶς δικάσης here might well be another way of describing not only partiality in judgment (toward the rich) but also merciless judgment (toward the poor), actions to which God responds with strict judgment. Lines 51-52 show the limitations of human judgment, warning, “Whoever wrongs willfully is a bad man; but if he does so under compulsion, I shall not pass sentence ἣ δὴ ὑπὶ ἀνάγκης, οὐκ ἐρέω τὸ τέλος, for it is each man’s intention that is examined.” The author sees “the end” as determined by internal motivations, thus he places judgment outside of what any human can make on another. The only one who can examine a person’s intentions is God, thus he is the only one who can declare a person “a bad man.”

Expressing a sentiment like Proverbs 17:9, Pseudo-Phocylides 141-42 urges:

πλαζόμενοι δὲ βροτὸν καὶ ἀλήτροπον οὐποτ ἐλέγξεις.
βέλτερον ἀντ ἐξήρου τεύχειν φίλον εὐμενέοντα
Never expose a wandering man and a sinner.
It is better to make a gracious friend instead of an enemy.

The second half of the proverb clarifies that the “exposure” is a negative act such as gossip or defamation. By exposing a sinner, a person gains an enemy by humiliating them in the public sphere. In contrast, therefore, the choice not to expose the wanderer is a gracious act that brings reconciliation. By forgiveness one gains a “gracious friend” who is grateful for the consideration of the person who saw their sins and yet did not shame them but allowed an opportunity for repentance and change.

4 Maccabees presents a clear discussion of divine justice and mercy, exploring the fates of the righteous and the wicked. In it, Antiochus attempts to convince various righteous characters to sin against God in the face of torture. Along the lines of Pseudo-Phocylides 51-52, in 8:14 Antiochus attempts to persuade seven brothers, “whatever justice (δίκη) you revere will be merciful to you when you transgress under compulsion.” According to Antiochus, a just God would understand giving way to sin under compulsion and fear of death, therefore the Jewish sons who were before him ought not hold out any

longer because God would understand the tortures they faced and forgive them.

Antiochus argues that mercy would be given to a person who sins under compulsion, in contrast to a strict justice that takes no account of circumstances. The text continues with what might have been the musings of the brothers had they been cowardly and not controlled by reason. In this scene, they concede his point: “The divine justice (θεία δίκη) will pardon us for being afraid of the king under duress. . . . Not even the Law itself would willingly condemn us to death for being afraid of the instruments of torture” (8:22, 25).

The text, however, reveals the king’s logic as faulty reasoning: instead of giving way to their fear, the brothers hold firm to the Law regardless of the pain facing them because endurance in obedience is the way to please God (cf. 9:2, 8). Mercy, as the brothers understood it, was individually won through endurance and obedience but extends to the community of Israel.

The seventh brother’s indictment against the king contrasts God’s justice toward the king and his mercy toward the Israelites, equating the two. Because of the king’s failure to recognize with gratitude the gift of kingship he has been given, the brother warns the king of his doom while praying for the preservation of his people (12:12, 17-18).

God’s mercy towards his people would presumably be shown in releasing Israel from oppression, but Antiochus’ judgment is individual and warranted by the evils that he has enacted. God’s mercy is not envisaged as solely for those who die, but for the entirety of Israel. The seven brothers, by their righteous self-sacrifice, hope to propitiate God for the sins Israel has committed (cf. 9:23-24). Mercy, for the Israelites, consists in their freedom
from oppression. For those who die, mercy is attaining immortality (cf. 18:23). But the king’s continuance in murder leaves him outside of the possibility of mercy, facing only God’s justice (cf. 18:22).

The Epistle of Enoch continues the same patterns of warning people to live righteous lives so that they might deserve mercy. From the beginning of the Epistle following the blessing of Methuselah, the tone is set by the Instruction on the Two Ways (94:1-5) which begins, “the paths of righteousness are worthy of acceptance, but the paths of iniquity will quickly be destroyed and vanish.” The author does not discuss mercy per se (Ἐλεος does not appear in the Epistle), but instead argues for God’s “acceptance” of the righteous in contrast to the judgment and destruction of those who walk in wickedness. “The reader should note here a developing dichotomy between judgment according to deeds (for sinners, including sinners within Israel) and the rewarding of the righteous by mercy.” In this section, the “paths of iniquity” are also called “paths of violence and death” (v. 2), and “paths of evil . . . the paths of death” that bring destruction (v. 3). In contrast, the “paths of righteousness” are also called the “paths of peace” by which “you may live and prosper” (v. 4). This section’s structure and message are much like that of Psalm 1, in which the two ways of life and death are laid out for the wise.

4 Maccabees 17:17-18 provides the interesting explanation that the brothers received eternal life in God’s presence on account of their endurance, implying that they would not be in that blessed state had they succumbed to the torture and disobeyed the commandments of God as Antiochus urged.

Reiser, Jesus and Judgment, 63, observes: “Enoch’s letter (92-105) is a word of consolation for the righteous and a preaching of judgment for sinners, very much in the spirit of the superscription of the Book of Watchers in 1:1.”

VanLandingham, Judgment & Justification, 91, warns, “One of the primary issues for this author and his community arises from the problem created when the wicked experience the blessings of the covenant, whereas the righteous do not. The Last Judgment will resolve this contradiction between historical reality and the Deuteronomic formula.”

Yinger, Paul, Judaism, 70. He adds, “as in the OT, it is not individual transgressions per se which cause these apostate Israelites to experience God’s damnation. Rather, the deeds manifest that they are ‘wicked in [their] hearts’ (104:9) and ‘do not fear the Most High’ (101:9), while those who are accounted righteous fear God and ‘walk in the path of his righteousness’ (99:10; 101:1)” (71-72).

Boccaccini, “Qumran and Enoch,” 75 observes, “The identification of evil with impurity makes separation the new password for salvation.” He later continues, “The proto-Epistle adds that, at the beginning of the final times (the present of the author), God will choose a group from among the chosen. This group will receive special ‘wisdom’ and will keep themselves separated from the rest of the people while acting on their behalf and thus preparing the way for the redemption of Israel and of the entire creation.”
The discourse in 99:11-100:6 deepens the picture of what the author views as “judgment.” First, 99:11-16 warns that “in Sheol you will be slain” (v. 11, a phrase missing in the Gk.), for they continue to sin “until the day of the great judgment (ἡμέρας τῆς κρίσεως τῆς μεγάλης), v. 16). In 100:1-4, while the text is quite corrupt, Nicklesburg and VanderKam have pieced together a description of the judgment, a “day” described with massive threats of murder and death, ultimately reaching a climax in which “angels will descend, going down into the hidden places on that day, and those who aided iniquity will be gathered into one place. And the Most High will be aroused on that day (ἐν ἡμέρᾳ κρίσεως) to execute great judgment (κρίσιν μεγάλην) on all” (v. 4). What began as a this-worldly prophetic condemnation becomes an eschatological event with angels descending and everyone facing judgment, emphasized by the repetition of κρίσις. The text clarifies, however, that the “all” who face judgment does not include the righteous, for 100:5-6 describe them as being guarded and protected “until evil and sin come to an end,” an event most likely occurring in the judgment just described. Judgment comes upon the wicked, but the righteous, those who realize that “their wealth cannot save them” and who study the “words of this epistle,” find protection by the angels.

Finally, 1 Enoch 102:4-104:8 reveals God’s justice and how his judgment after death puts to right the imbalances that occur in this life. The dead sinners are threatened with impending judgment, even if their entire time on earth looked pleasant and at their deaths they were declared blessed (103:5-6, in a sharp contrast with Sir. 11:26-28). In 103:7-8, the author discloses that, whereas the righteous were perceived to have gone to Sheol but did not, the wicked face a devastating fate:

```
οτι εις οδου καταξουσθυν τας ψυχας υμων, και εκει οπουται εν αναγκη μεγαλη και ον σκοτει και ον φλογα και ον σκοτει και ον ουσια εισελευμοναι αι ψυχαι υμων εν πασαις ταις γενεαις του αιωνος. ουαι υμιν, ουα εστιν υμιν χαιρειν
```

(77). For him, this is the beginning of how “the Enochians (or part of them) became the Essenes” (78). While the proto-Epistle helped initiate this move, the proper Epistle (only 96:6-104:6) “has specific anti-Qumranic elements,” revealing the separation of ways between the Enochic group and the Essenes (82).
...that down to Sheol they will lead your souls; and there they will be in great distress and in darkness and in a snare and in a flaming fire. Into great darkness your souls will enter, and the great judgment will be for all generations of eternity. Woe to you, you will have no peace.

Whereas the Wisdom of Solomon foreshadowed life for the righteous while the wicked fail to attain immortality, 1 Enoch places both the rewards of righteousness and the punishment of the wicked on an eternal scale. The author pronounces a “woe” upon the wicked that they will lack peace, failing to attain to the Sabbath rest that was promised to the faithful. In contrast to light and peace, the wicked are promised darkness and torment.

This judgment looms because of the way the wicked treated the righteous poor, the humble who were defenseless (103:9-104:6). The righteous, meanwhile, are promised that, despite having been tormented by their masters in life, their pleas for help have reached the ears of God (cf. Jas. 5:1-6). As the passage progresses, we find that although the righteous also will see the “great day of judgment,” they need not fear it, for they “will not be found with the sinners” (104:5). “Judgment,” therefore, functions in two ways in this section: as the legal righting of the social inequity and oppression within this world (i.e., “justice”) as well as the eternal punishment of the wicked who enacted the oppression of the righteous poor (i.e., “judgment”).

Ultimately, in the Epistle of Enoch “mercy” is not an active theme: “salvation” stands opposed to “judgment,” the former safeguarding the righteous at the time when God enacts his judgment upon the wicked. “Judgment,” meanwhile, stands for the time when God will make all things right, bringing justice to the oppressed through the

254 Reiser, Jesus and Judgment, 145, observes, “The oldest conception of eschatological judgment in Judaism expects judgment as the imposition of punishment on Israel’s enemies at the end of time. This conception rests on the prophets’ proclamation of the day of YHWH, which was a determining influence for the origin and development of Jewish eschatology as a whole. . . . The judgment of that day consists of a violent action with which God and God’s faithful utterly destroy the gentile nations.” He continues, “The concept of an historical, punitive judgment is also found, however, in texts that are not based on the contrast between Israel and the Gentiles, but between righteous and sinners. In this case the division runs through Israel itself, with the punishment falling primarily on the sinners in Israel. Examples are found as early as Malachi and Isaiah 65-66” (146).
punishment of the wicked. Both categories of people—those destined for salvation and those for judgment—are clear-cut and based upon the life each person has lived, and while repentance may be accounted for, there is a clear sense that one’s deeds will be the basis for one’s destination.

Preliminary Conclusions

Throughout this survey, one of the most obvious developments is the growth of apocalyptic influence on wisdom and the growing notion that God’s justice can and will be worked out after death. So Yinger can argue, “Not merely one element among others, judgment is the central issue in Jewish eschatology of this period and forms the main theme of many of its literary products.” More important is the basic framework for justice: the pattern revealed by the wisdom literature is that judgment (punishment) is the negative outworking of justice, while mercy (or salvation, life) is the positive. That is, when justice is enacted—either in this life or afterward—the wicked receive judgment and the righteous receive mercy.

“Faith,” as a theoretical concept, proves rare. The closest the term comes to an abstract theological category is when the various authors urge faith in God’s faithfulness to enact justice despite the seeming inequities in the world. The root tends towards either faithfulness or a description of the faithful, namely, the righteous. When describing the

---

255 VanLandingham, Judgment & Justification, 90, observes regarding 98:6-8, “Since the coming judgment is executed on behalf of the righteous, the word for ‘judgment’ throughout 1 Enoch connotes a negative aspect and is descriptive primarily of what will occur to the wicked.” He continues, “The final judgment is characterized by God’s mercy because God executes judgment against the wicked on behalf of the righteous—the oppressed” (92).

256 Boccaccini, “Qumran and Enoch,” 82, argues: “The author of the Epistle of Enoch does not deny that evil has a superhuman origin, but holds human beings responsible for the sinful actions they commit. . . . The Enochic doctrine of evil does not contradict the principle of human responsibility. Evil is a contamination that prepares a fertile ground for sin (we might now use the term ‘temptation’), but it is the individuals themselves who have ‘invented sin’ and, therefore, are responsible for their own deeds.” Cf. Jas. 1:13-16.

257 Yinger, Paul, Judaism, 88. He later adds, “In no instance have we found the note of fearful uncertainty so often associated with judgment according to deeds in caricatures of legalistic Judaism. . . . Rather than being necessary to determine one’s status as righteous or wicked before God, this judgment functions primarily to reveal this status publically and to initiate the execution of the appropriate sentences.”

258 VanLandingham, Judgment & Justification, 77, observes in Jubilees a larger pattern: “Mercy refers to God’s beneficence or saving activity and, as a term, remains neutral in regard to whether God’s action is deserved,” but concludes “that the author believed that . . . everybody is saved (primarily from God’s judgment) because of his or her own righteousness.”
deeds of the righteous, “works” includes everything from controlling one’s tongue to a particular emphasis on caring for the poor and enacting justice on behalf of the defenseless. Only very rarely are specific “works of the law” mentioned; generally sacrifice is the only one to appear and only in passing. Perfect sinlessness is never expected, however, and repentance regularly appears as a good deed of the righteous. Finally, throughout the texts both the “word” and the “law” are entities to be studied and obeyed, whether simply as the content of the teachings in each particular text or more particularly as the words and commands of God. The Law is seen as a holistic entity revealing the will of God, but more often than not it is the ethical, not ritual, aspects of the law to which the texts allude.

Crenshaw concludes, “The goal of all wisdom was the formation of character.” These categories integrate to reveal a consistent pattern across the wisdom texts: the righteous are those who faithfully obey the law of God, particularly in regards to caring for the poor and guarding their tongues, and the righteous are the only ones who will receive God’s mercy when he enacts his justice.

---

259 Yinger, Paul, Judaism, 62, observes “One’s works of obedience are not viewed as merits, each to be recompensed in atomistic fashion, but instead are the observable manifestations of the covenant loyalty of the unseen heart. . . . The requisite obedience (righteousness) was never viewed as flawless perfection, but might be better described by such terms as consistency, integrity, and authenticity of action.” Likewise he concludes, “one’s works are not viewed mechanically or atomistically, but are a unitary whole revealing one’s inner character of faith. Faith and works are not in competition with one another. Rather they represent two sides of the single coin of human response in the light of God’s gracious covenantal arrangement.”

260 Crenshaw, Old Testament Wisdom, 3.
CHAPTER 2: THE SAYINGS OF JESUS ACCORDING TO MATTHEW

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

James is closely related to the Jesus tradition. Kittel declares, “Es gibt keine Schrift des NT außer den Evangelien, die so mit Anklängen an Herrnworte gespickt ist wie er.” While Hartin argues for a close relationship between the Jacobean community and that of Matthew, Bauckham is less convinced that such a specific relationship can be drawn, ultimately concluding, “it is not possible to pin down his knowledge of the tradition of Jesus’ sayings to particular Gospels or Gospel sources known to us.” He argues that James functions as a sage who reformulates the Jesus sayings, much as Sirach did with Proverbs. Because of this debate, the first question shall be to briefly examine the underlying methodological assumptions in this chapter.

A. METHODOLOGY

As was noted above, James and the Synoptics appear to share some sort of relationship. Davids observes some of the complexities of this relationship: “While the numbers of parallels show that Matthew is closer to James than is Luke, in tone (for example, in his woes on the rich) and in language James is far closer to Luke,” to which he concludes that “James is therefore using a pre-gospel form of what we might loosely term the Q tradition in a redaction (his own or someone else’s) which differs from both of the two canonical gospels.” While Hartin argues for a close relationship with James and

---

261 Gerhard Kittel, “Der geschichtliche Ort des Jakobusbriefes,” ZNW 41 (1942), 84.
262 See, e.g., Hartin, James and the Q Sayings, particularly pp. 187-98, who argues for a common Q tradition (or M) between James and Matthew, from which both texts drew. Richard Bauckham, “Review of P.J. Hartin’s James and the Q Sayings of Jesus,” JTS 44 (1993), 301, however, warns that “Hartin’s close association of James with the Matthaean community is problematic in ways he seems not to have noticed,” and warns that “One has the impression that the conclusions desired are dictating the assessment of the evidence” (300).
263 Bauckham, James, 31.
264 See Bauckham, James, 74ff. He explains, “The role [of sage] therefore involves passing on the accumulated wisdom of the tradition, but also penetrating its meaning, drawing out its insights, developing it in new ways,” communicating “as his own wisdom in his own formulation the wisdom he has gained from his intensive study of the tradition” (76, 79). He later states, James has “special canonical connections with the wisdom literature of the Old Testament and with the Synoptic teaching of Jesus” (111).
265 Davids, “James and Jesus,” 68. He adds, “Thus James witnesses to a third community for which the ethical teaching of Jesus was important.”
Q^Man^266, one which Kloppenborg supports and strengthens,^267 others remain less certain that such a direct line can be drawn. A consensus in James scholarship, however, is growing around the idea of emulation, or a creative setting of the Jesus tradition by the author of James. This was first and most comprehensively explored by Bauckham but developed by others attempting to work out the textual relation.268 Davids concurs:

“Everyone would recognize the authority behind an allusion, whether or not their version of the tradition had the exact verbal form. Thus we can say that James knew the Jesus tradition and assumed that his readers were also familiar with it (otherwise the allusive references would fall on unknowing ears).”269 Subsequent to Bauckham’s book, the idea of allusion and imitation has dominated Jacobean studies.

Bauckham, however, also issued some warnings regarding casual use of allusion to assess dependence between texts. Looking at the use of the Gospels in later Christian texts, he cautions:

In most of the literature with which we are concerned, direct citations of Gospel traditions are the exception, allusions the rule. This creates a problem which is apparent in a great deal of work in this area: that of knowing how to distinguish a real allusion to the Gospel traditions from a coincidental resemblance. . . . Agreement in an unusual idea, with minimum verbal resemblance, may be more impressive than agreement in a commonplace idea expressed in rather common and obvious words and phrases.270

For Bauckham, simply having common phrases was not enough; there had to be some degree of uniqueness between the two texts before claiming a dependance. So, for example, Davids posits a comparison between James 1:21 and Luke 8:12, since “in James 1:21 a paragraph on pure speech (i.e., speaking without anger) is summed up with a call to receive the implanted word which is able to save one’s soul. The interesting fact is that

266 Hartin, *James and the Q Sayings*, particularly chapters 5-6.
268 Bauckham, *James*, particularly chapter 2.
269 Davids, “James and Jesus,” 69.
only in Luke 8:12 is the word (λόγος) said or implied to have been able to save.”

Deppe, however, supports a somehow closer relationship between Matthew and James, observing that they share a theological framework.

"Heading the list of themes where James and Matthew stand in the same theological camp is the concept of the law. Of all the NT writers the closest perspective to that of Matthew is without a doubt the Epistle of James. . . . Both James and Matthew, therefore, recognize a new law summarized by Jesus without setting aside the old moral law of the OT. The gospel and the law are thus linked together for both authors. The gospel of the kingdom (Mt. 4:23; 9:35; 24:14) does not relax even the least of the commandments (5:19) for Matthew; instead, the word is completed by doing the commands of the Master (7:21). In James too the mentioning of the gospel as ‘the implanted word which is able to save your souls’ (1:21) is followed immediately by a command to ‘be doers of the word’, an expression which could just as easily mean ‘be doers of the law’.

Deppe thus, without intending to, offers tacit support to Hartin’s observation of the nearness of James and Matthew.

The Gospel of Matthew, however, was most likely drawn together after the epistle of James, even if one assumes that James is pseudepigraphical and composed after the death of James, the leader of the Jerusalem Church. Thus one cannot state, as with Ben Sira, that the final form would have been read by the author of the epistle. Bauckham offers one escape from this conundrum, for “we have to recognize that a writer need not always allude to the same source, and that in a period when written and oral sources were both well known they might influence each other in his memory.” McCartney deals with this dilemma by placing James and Matthew into similar positions in the early Church: “Certainly, one would expect some correspondence of James with Jesus’s teaching [in Matthew], simply because [Matthew and James] come from the same milieu of early

---

271 Davids, “James and Jesus,” 71.
272 Deppe, *Sayings of Jesus*, 161. He lists several similarities: “Both understand the teaching of the church as a new Christianized law (Mt. 5:17-20; Jas. 2:8-11; 4:11-12). Both speak about the law as the way to perfection. In both the law of love is, on the one hand, set alongside the other commandments which together constitute the law and, on the other hand, is given special recognition as the most important of the commandments, one which fulfils the whole law.”
Christianity, which had evolved from within Judaism (Penner 1996: 254). This is, quite possibly, the nearest explanation for how the Gospel of Matthew functions in this thesis. James scholars have consistently noted the similarities between the Synoptics and James, ties strengthened between Matthew and James in tone and theology. If most scholars concur that James is, as Bauckham describes it, “a creative re-expression of significant aspects of the wisdom of Jesus,” it seemed reasonable to compare it with a completed, potentially related final form of one Gospel, one sharing a similar contextual space. Matthew scholar Dale Allison posits that, “The Christianity behind James was probably a near relative of the Christianity reflected in Matthew, for the two writings share much.”

Thus it is not so much the exact sayings of the historical Jesus, but the contextualized life and teaching as presented by the Matthean Jesus, one first-century setting of the sayings of Jesus within the context of a related community, that is being examined here. On the whole, this chapter will seek to examine one coherent, theological setting of the life and teachings of Jesus. First it will study the three sets of

---

274 McCartney, James, 51-52. He adds, “The extent of correspondence, and the unique character and similar phrasing of the prohibition of oaths, make it more likely that James knew Matthew (or vice versa), or that both James and Matthew had access to variants of a particular text (such as a pre-Synoptic form of Q, as Hartin 1991: 141-72 proposes), or that both James and Matthew were disciples of a particular tradition, namely the teaching of Jesus . . . Bauckham (1999: 97-107) notes that not only are particular texts similar, but also the overall tenor of James’s wisdom is similar to Jesus’s teaching in its (1) radical reinterpretation of Torah, (2) rejection of social stratification, (3) appeal to eschatological motivation, (4) emphasis on God’s mercy over judgment, and (5) concern for the reconstituted people of God. The author of this letter has absorbed not just several of Jesus’s sayings, but indeed the very ethos of Jesus’s ethical vision.”

275 Bauckham, James, 111. “James’ wisdom is a creative development of the Jewish wisdom tradition decisively inspired and shaped by the wisdom of Jesus.”


277 Childs, New Testament as Canon, 438, observes, “even when compared to Matthew’s interpretation of Jesus’ teachings, the letter of James functions canonically in a unique way because of its post-Pauline context. The Gospel of Matthew offers a construal of Jesus’ teachings as the true interpreter of the Old Testament law. Canonically Matthew functions as a witness to Jesus’ earthly life leading up to his death and resurrection. However, James extends Matthew’s understanding into the post-Pauline period. His letter is not just a check against a misunderstanding of Paul, but a positive witness for hearing the synoptic sayings in a post-Pauline Christianity. The letter bears witness that, correctly interpreted, the Old Testament continues to function as a norm for Christian living even after the resurrection.”

278 Johnson, James, 55-56, notes, “James shows the greatest affinity to the tradition of Jesus’ sayings rather than to that of Jesus’ stories. Some of these, indeed, may be attributed to the accident of sharing a moral universe that emphasizes the connection between verbal profession and action (Matt 7:21-23; Luke 6:46 = James 2:14-26), as well as the importance not only of hearing but also of doing (Matt 7:24-27; Luke 6:46-49 = James 1:22-25), and uses agricultural imagery to exemplify the connection between identity and consistent behavior (Matt 7:16; Luke 6:44 = James 3:10-13).” From this and other analogies he shows, he draws the
paired themes (law/word; faith/works; judgment/mercy) throughout the book to see how they are developed by the Gospel writer. Second we will look at several key teachings of Jesus in Matthew that are often highlighted in studies on James: the Sermon on the Mount, the parable of the unmerciful servant (ch. 18), and the judgment of the sheep and the goats (ch. 25).

B. Matthew’s use of the themes

In the wisdom literature, all of the chosen ideas overlap at different points: speech can be a cause for judgment, obedience is needed in accordance to the Law’s commands, the righteous act in mercy, and so on. This same overlap occurs in Matthew, so with the attempt to place passages under their appropriate headings, we recognize that the subjects are not as divided as they may appear here.

1. The Word and The Law

a. General survey

Both νόμος and λόγος are crucial to Matthew’s understanding of Jesus’ identity and role. Matthew uses λόγος 33 times to refer to general speech or “words” (e.g., 5:37), to Jesus’ ability to heal with a word (echoes of the Wisdom of Solomon), to the OT law, but most often to his teaching about the Kingdom of God. In all but one case (Matt. 22:36), Jesus is the only one to use either νόμος (8 times) or ἐντολή (6 times). By this, Matthew depicts Jesus as the one with the right and authority to interpret the law, and

following conclusion: “1) James makes use of sayings traditions that are otherwise identified as being from Jesus; 2) although some of his wording resembles Matthew in particular, it is more likely that he makes use of the traditions at a stage of development prior to the synoptic redaction, that is, at a stage roughly that of the gospel sayings source conventionally designated Q; 3) the use of the sayings tradition is James’ distinctive way of mediating the ‘Jesus experience.’”

Davids, “James and Jesus,” 67, argues, “It is significant that the allusions are not scattered all over the gospels, but they focus on one large block, namely, the ethical material contained in the Sermon on the Mount/Plain. On the one hand, this concentration should be expected, for the paraenetic material collected in the Sermon is most suited to the topics discussed in James. The fact that this material appears in block form not only in Matthew and Luke (which may be dependant on each other or may be independent redactions of aprevious collection) but also in James gives prima facie evidence that there existed an early paraenetic collection of the sayings of Jesus (oral or written) and that James knew a version of that block of tradition.”

In two parables, Jesus uses λόγος to refer to “accounts” between a master and a servant (18:23 and 25:19), each time in analogy to how God will judge his people.
λόγος serves to reveal the content of Jesus’ interpretation. Neither term appears before chapter five, as if with the beginning of the Sermon on the Mount Matthew introduces Jesus as the teacher, interpreter, and fulfillment of the law.

b. The New Moses and the New Yoke: Matthew 1-4 and 11:19, 28-30

Some have suggested that Matthew’s introduction sets Jesus up as a new Moses, a new lawgiver. Barth notes that the “thesis that Jesus, as a second Moses, founds a new law, the Messianic Torah, is based to a large extent on the opinion that the old synagogue expected a new Torah from the Messiah.”²８１ The nativity story sets Jesus as the promised Davidic king, the fulfillment of multiple prophecies (1:22-23; 2:5-6, 17-18, 23). In addition, the opening chapters, with their stress on fulfillment, also present the reader with the idea that the coming of Jesus initiates a new phase in the history of Israel. Even more, the flight to and return from Egypt, the single boy child saved from slaughter, and period in the wilderness echo the story of Moses and of Israel in Exodus. As Macaskill observes, “at the heart of the Exodus account is the idea of a revelation being made to Israel through that figure [of Moses].”²８２ And indeed, as the story moves toward the Sermon, the setting on the mountain-top recalls that of Moses receiving the law on Sinai, preparing “the reader for the idea that some fresh revelation will be made by God as it was in the original Exodus.”²８３ Jesus’ coming, according to Matthew, categorically fulfills what was promised regarding a Davidic king and also the prophetic promises of a greater revelation by God.

As the Messiah and the new Moses, Jesus stands in contrast to the other teachers of his time. While Matthew 11:19 and 28-30 do not refer either to λόγος or νόμος, the conceptual link between wisdom, law, and the yoke initially created by Sirach 6:30 and 51:26 helps to expand the image of Jesus as the new lawgiver. As Witherington argues,

²８２ Grant Macaskill, Revealed Wisdom and Inaugurated Eschatology in Ancient Judaism and Early Christianity (Leiden: Brill, 2007), 124-25.
²８３ Ibid., 126. For his exploration of this theme in Matthew, see pp. 123-27; for a full defense, see Dale C. Allison, The New Moses: A Matthean Typology (Edinburgh: T&T Clark, 1993).
however, “the differences are at least as important as the similarities, for at Matt. 11:29 it is
Jesus, not Torah, that is identified or associated with the personification of Wisdom.” In
Matthew 11:19, Jesus claims a justification for his own actions of eating and drinking with
the statement, “wisdom is proved right by her actions.” This leads to his call to respond in
11:28-30, where the yoke imagery comes to the fore. Jesus reiterates the call to Wisdom’s
yoke in Sirach 51:26, “Put your neck under her yoke, and let your souls receive instruction;
it is to be found close by,” but “makes it clear that it is Jesus as Wisdom offering his yoke,
not any previous yoke that is in view.” Davies and Allison explain:

No other Jewish teacher ever told another: Take up my yoke. This, however, is
exactly what Jesus does. He is, therefore, playing not only the part of Wisdom . . .
but also the part of Torah; or, rather, he is Wisdom, he is Torah. . . . For Judaism
“Torah” is . . . the full revelation of God and of his will for man. So the
identification of Jesus with Torah makes Jesus the full revelation of God and of
his will for man.

Ben Sira offered an understanding of Torah as Wisdom’s yoke; Jesus—while not replacing
the Torah (cf. Matt. 5:17-20)—offers a yoke that gives rest and teaches the recipient the
way of his own character. Gentleness and humility are placed in opposition to weariness
and heavy burdens. As Deutsch notes, the yoke “designates the whole teaching of Jesus
and connotes obligation or responsibility.” Although Jesus demands a higher obedience
even than the Scribes and Pharisees, his teaching is paradoxically not a wearying and
burdensome yoke, but one that brings rest. Suggs describes Matthew as confronting the
reader with “law opposed to law. The yoke of Jesus is not some other yoke than the yoke

284 Witherington, Jesus the Sage, 145.
285 Ibid., 360.
286 W. D. Davies and Dale C. Allison, A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on The Gospel According to Saint
287 Intriguingly, these ideas play a major role in James in terms of the desired character traits of the audience.
Cf. ἡρῴδεις in Jas 1:21; 3:13 and the call for the “deeds done in the humility of wisdom”—an intriguing
link between this passage in Matthew and the ‘wisdom’ passage in James 3:13-18. Also, τοπενοὺς is crucial
for James’ understanding of who God honors. See especially 1:9; 4:6.
288 Celia Deutsch, Hidden Wisdom and the Easy Yoke: Wisdom, Torah and Discipleship in Matthew 11:25-30
(Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1987), 42.
of Torah. Rather, the yoke of the true Torah, of Wisdom, is set over against that of the Pharisaic Torah.”

By presenting Jesus as a sort of new Moses (the new lawgiver) and as the true Wisdom of God (the revelation of God and his will for humanity, the one who can rightly interpret the law), Matthew compels the reader to take seriously Jesus’ words and actions as presenting to us the fulfillment of God’s revelation to his creation. But also, as Hauerwas reminds us, “Jesus, the new Moses, will like Moses be burdened by his people’s unfaithfulness.” Just as the original Torah required obedience in order to attain the covenant rest, so Jesus’ yoke must be accepted and lived for it to bring the promised rest.


In two somewhat parallel stories, Jesus interprets the commandments for his audience. In Matthew 19:16-22, “one” came to Jesus and asked, “Teacher, what good deed must I do (τί ἄγαθον ποιήσω) to have eternal life?” Jesus responds: “If you wish to enter into life, keep the commandments.” The man then questions “Which?” Jesus replies with a composite sketch including the love command from Leviticus 19:18. The man presses further, claiming to have obeyed those, so Jesus reveals that perfection comes through the complete dissolution of the man’s possessions in favor of the poor that the man might “come and follow.” Jeremias warns against forcing too literal a translation:

The evidence of contemporary literature does not allow the ‘all’ to be pressed too far. According to the Mishnah (M. Arak. viii.4) a man may devote only part of his means to the Temple, and to go further than this was not valid. This passage

289 M. Jack Suggs, *Wisdom, Christology, and Law in Matthew’s Gospel* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1970), 107. He concludes that “Matthew daringly identified Jesus with Wisdom. For the evangelist, Jesus was not Wisdom’s child but Wisdom incarnate. . . . In relation to the law, Jesus transcended familiar categories: as he was the incarnation of Wisdom, so was he the embodiment of Torah” (130).


291 See particularly the arguments regarding rest in Macaskill, *Revealed Wisdom*, 150-52.

292 Alan P. Stanley, *Did Jesus Teach Salvation by Works? The Role of Works in Salvation in the Synoptic Gospels* (Eugene, Ore.: Pickwick Publications, 2006), 198-99, observes that, as with the fulfillment of the Law in 5:17-20, “the issue now is not really one’s relationship to the Law but one’s relationship to Jesus.” Therefore, while “it was the Mosaic Law that Jesus was referring to when speaking with the Rich Young Ruler . . . the key is that Jesus takes the ruler beyond the Law—and thus surpasses it—to Himself!”
demonstrates that men were obliged to set a limit to their generosity. It had already been recognized as a precept in the first century AD that it was not permissible to spend more than a fifth of one’s means on acts of charity (J. Peah i.1, 15b.23) . . . . The phrase ‘to sell all that he had’ . . . cannot always be taken literally, and the evidence shows how far the demands for charity on a man’s means were taken in practice.293

The man’s desolation at Jesus’ word, however, indicate that Jeremias’ cautions may well not reflect this situation.

The man leaves, devastated by this λόγος of Jesus. France first recalls that every follower of Jesus is called to this higher righteousness (5:20, 48), then observes, “By this more searching demand Jesus shows the man how inadequate his supposed righteousness (v. 20) really was; it did not touch him at the point of his real interest. To obey ‘perfectly’ the command of Leviticus 19:18 will involve him in a practical renunciation for which he is not prepared.”294 Now clearly this was a specific command to a specific audience, but it is worth nothing that the man takes Jesus’ λόγος as a requirement equivalent to the other commandments and could not see his way to obedience.295 Stanley observes, “Perfection is a synonym for eternal life and a requirement for entry into the kingdom.”296 Jesus’ λόγος provides the hearers with a new understanding of perfection by obeying the intent of the law as pointing to him.

---

293 Joachim Jeremias, Jerusalem in the Time of Jesus: An Investigation into Economic and Social Conditions during the New Testament Period, 3rd ed. (London: SCM Press, 1962), 127. He continues, “On the other hand, it was performed to the letter by such a man as R. Johanan: for the sake of studying the Torah he sold all his material possessions without even retaining enough for the needs of his old age. We must, therefore, consider the possibility that ‘to sell all’ is not to be taken literally, but is rather a powerful expression for the demands of charity” (128).


295 This use of λόγος may help to justify James’ correlation of the λόγος as a law. Likewise Jesus’ teaching on the rich and their difficulty of attaining salvation (19:23-26) may also reside in the background of James’ varied warnings to those who rest securely in their riches. Günther Bornkamm, “End-Expectation and Church in Matthew,” in Tradition and Interpretation in Matthew, ed. Günther Bornkamm, Gerhard Barth, and Heinz Joachim Held (London: SCM Press, 1963), 29, highlights the important point, “Fulfilment of the commandments and perfection can no more be realised anywhere except in ‘following’ Jesus. This is seen most clearly in the percope of the rich young man. . . . In following Jesus the perfection demanded by the law is thus fulfilled.”

296 Stanley, Jesus and Salvation by Works, 201. Earlier he states regarding the young man’s question, “Eternal life is thus a road to be traveled . . . a pilgrimage beginning with an entrance and ending with perfection” (142-43).
In the context of Jesus’ strivings with the Jewish leaders, in Matthew 22:34-40 a legal expert of the Pharisees tests Jesus by asking him to name the greatest commandment.

More specific than the rich man, this lawyer precisely words his query for one commandment out of the law (ποία ἐντολὴ μεγάλῃ ἐν τῷ νόμῳ). Jesus first gives one—undivided love of God—which he calls ἡ μεγάλη καὶ πρώτῃ ἐντολῇ, but then he elevates Leviticus 19:18 to being ὀμοία αὐτῇ, and concludes that these two commands tie together the entirety of the law and prophets. Rather than entering a lengthy legal discussion with those who sought to trap him, Jesus provides a sweeping interpretation of the entire Torah. Luomanen notes, “It is generally accepted that for Matthew the love commandments constituted a critical principle which could be used to set aside individual OT commandments,” which appears at times true, particularly in the Sabbath controversies. Hagner agrees, arguing that Jesus does not repudiate the OT law but rather distills its essence and creates a “hermeneutic for the understanding of all the other commandments.”

More significantly, Davies notes that “first-century Jews commonly summarized the twin aspects of the law as human piety toward God and love of one another. . . . Jesus’ answer is just the kind of answer with which no Jew would have found fault,” and

---

297 W. D. Davies and Dale C. Allison, *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on The Gospel According to Saint Matthew*, Vol. III (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1997), 240, make the following translation observation: “We take μεγάλη to be superlative and ποία to mean ‘what’: the lawyer wishes to know what is the greatest commandment. But there is no definite article before μεγάλη, and ποῖος often means ‘what sort of’. So one could take the question to mean: what sort of commandment is great in the Torah, that is, what is the quality shared by the most important commandments? One can readily imagine that Jesus was asked such a question, which reminds one of the rabbinic debates over the ’heavy’ and ’light’ commandments. But it is wiser to suppose that question corresponds to answer, and the answer offers ’the greatest and first commandment’.”


299 Donald A. Hagner, “Holiness and Ecclesiology: The Church in Matthew,” in *Built Upon the Rock: Studies in the Gospel of Matthew*, ed. Daniel M. Gurtner and John Nolland (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 2008), 178. He views this passage as essential for understanding Jesus and the law: “in his sovereign authority Jesus is able to cut through to the very essence of the law. He defines the weightier matters of the law as 'justice, mercy and faithfulness' (23:23), sounding very much like an Old Testament prophet. The essence of the law, however, is found in the striking twofold love commandment. It is here that the ethical teaching of the law finds its root. . . . [Matt 22:40] is the heart of the law for Jesus.”

thereby Jesus silences questions about his theology, his Jewishness, and his teaching. In contrast, Hauerwas observes: “Jesus’ response has unfortunately been used to characterize the difference between Christians and Jews. Christians are alleged to represent a religion of love in contrast to Jews, who represent a religion of law.” Jesus’ answer does the opposite. By answering in such a way that no one can find fault while also positing that neighbor love is “like” love of God, Jesus reveals that to love God one must also love one’s neighbor and vice versa.

Luz observes that in Matthew’s Jewish Christian tradition, loving God would mean “knowing the one God and obeying him in the world. For them the love of God and the love of neighbor are closely related from the very beginning.” Although the laywer most likely expected to receive one or the other as an answer, by tying the two inextricably together, Jesus “reveals that the Torah’s foundation and end is, in our idiom, ‘moral monotheism’, or ‘theistic humanism’. Religion and ethics are one.” Jesus masterfully claims the authority from the other leaders in this pericope and concludes that only when the two commands are united have the Law and the Prophets been fulfilled.

d. Conclusions

Matthew presents Jesus to the reader as the supreme interpreter of the law, a new Moses come with the promised revelation from God. Jesus’ λόγος has the power to heal, as we will see next, but also reveals the commands of God to those willing to hear. Those who submit to his yoke find themselves called to perfection in obedience to the νόμος and simultaneously finding rest in humility. As Barth concludes, “The constant exhortation to the doing of God’s will and the threat of judgment according to works has

---

301 Hauerwas, Matthew, 194. He warns, “Jesus’ combination of the two commandments, however, challenges the assumption that we know ourselves well enough to be capable of altruism. Rather, to learn to love our neighbor as ourselves requires that we learn to be befriended by God so that we will have selves sufficient for love” (193).
302 Ulrich Luz, Matthew 21-28 (Minneapolis: Fortress, 2005), 83.
303 Davies and Allison, Matthew III, 245. They continue, “There is no self-contained piety: we must be prepared in the end to be defeated and broken up by life, which is the inevitable price of fastening one’s love upon other human individuals’ (Orwell).
not led in Matthew to the Christian relying on his own achievement; the disciples recognise themselves as empty before God, as the μικροί, who live by the seeking love of the shepherd.”

2. Faith and Works

a. General survey

Faith appears understated in Matthew. None of the vocabulary (πιστεύω, πίστις, πιστός) appears before chapter 8, six of the 24 appearances occur in chapters 8-9 in the series of healing stories, and the next two as well come in context of healing stories. It is not until 18:6 that we see an instance of the terms not in relation to a healing story. From there “belief/faith” shifts to mean the acceptance of a message—whether correct or not. The five uses of πιστός are all in chapters 24-25, amidst a series of parables regarding faithfulness and who pleases God. Meanwhile, ἔργον and its related verb also do not occur before chapter 5, but appear 10 times total, most often connoting deeds—good or bad—done for religious purposes or, more specifically, to please God. The verb, ποιέω, however, offers an additional insight into Matthew’s view of actions: namely, actions reveal the person. In eight verses Jesus pairs ποιέω with καρπός, repeatedly warning through fruit imagery that those who do not bear good fruit will be cut off and thrown into the fire, concluding in 12:33 that “a tree is known by its fruit.” Those of faith are apparent by their recognition of Jesus and their proper responses to God and Jesus.

b. Faith in Jesus’ Authority to Heal: Matthew 8-9

Matthew 8-9 is a series of stories relating to Jesus’ power as a healer. This succession illustrates the power of Jesus’ word to change the physical reality (8:8, 16), but even more, it reveals the necessity of the individual’s faith. Each person healed—or someone near them—demonstrates complete trust in Jesus’ ability to heal, and acts to get

---

304 Barth, “Matthew’s Understanding,” 125.
305 Matt. 3:8, 10; 7:17, 18, 19; 12:33; 13:26; 21:43.
within Jesus’ vicinity. Their faith leads them out of their homes and towns to Jesus’ presence in order to plead for his help.

For instance, in the dramatic interaction with the Roman centurion, he refuses to allow Jesus to enter his house, instead recognizing Jesus’ ability to heal from anywhere by his word (8:8). The centurion’s faith is a wholistic entity that first accepted Jesus’ ability to heal enough to bring him to Jesus to ask for healing, but more comprehensively did not need signs or physical proximity. He understood power and its implications, and therefore was confident that if Jesus had the power to heal then nothing more was needed. France defines the faith here as “absolute practical reliance on Jesus’ power,” the kind of faith that characterizes these chapters.306 The centurion understood that Jesus’ very words had healing, restorative power. In this statement he recognizes Jesus’ deity because he acknowledges Jesus’ power over the very state of existence: if Jesus speaks a word of healing—present or not—that healing is accomplished in the physical world.

Despite Jesus’ willingness to follow him, the centurion believes that Jesus could heal without coming near the servant. In 8:10 (par. Lk 7:9), Matthew notes Jesus’ response to this sort of faith. Nolland observes, “Matthew rarely attributes emotion to Jesus, and elsewhere it is always others who are amazed at Jesus. So the impression made here on Jesus stands out all the more.”307 Such complete faith startles Jesus, especially in someone not of Jewish origin. Morris comments, “Matthew records Jesus’ astonishment, a very human trait. Faith like this was not to be expected of a Gentile.”308 The people to whom he had been sent, the ones who knew the whole history of God’s work redeeming his people, did not exhibit such faith in his ability to heal as the centurion. As Jesus notes in

306 France, Matthew, 155.
308 Leon Morris, The Gospel According to Matthew (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1992), 194-95. He continues: “Faith is one of the great Christian concepts, but it is found only 8 times in Matthew. It points to trust in Jesus and, in a context like this, in his ability and readiness to give help in unexpected ways. . . . it is not without interest that in the whole story nothing is said about whether the sufferer had faith or not; it is the faith of the centurion that is brought out.”
8:11, this soldier exemplifies the “many from east and west” included in the Kingdom through a faith that surpasses that of the supposed people of God. Nolland continues:

As a statement made from the perspective of his whole ministry, it has something of a proleptic role (cf. discussion at 2:3). Jesus is not saying that he has failed to find faith in Israel, but he is saying that he has not found faith on the level of the centurion’s (this will apply as much to the disciples as to others). The following verses will go on to indicate, in effect, that the correlative of finding that the best of faith in Israel is not outstanding is that in some faith will be found to be entirely lacking. Israel is here viewed from a salvation-historical perspective: it is among God’s historical people that faith should most naturally be found. The kind of faith in view is one that recognizes and responds to what God has now begun to do in Jesus. As in Luke, ‘Faith . . . is attributed to those who act decisively on the basis of the conviction that God’s help is to be found with Jesus and gratefully receive God’s action through him’ (Nolland, Luke, 1:235).

Ultimately, Jesus responds to this faith with the pronouncement, Ὅς ἐπίστευσεν ὁ στρατηγός. This pronouncement includes the first use of πιστεύω in Matthew and raises a theoretical question about the centurion’s faith: If he had doubted at this point, would his servant have been healed? That, however, is not the point of the story. Rather, Matthew teaches that the centurion did not doubt Jesus’s ability to heal, even at a distance, and because of his steady faith, the servant was healed.

Matthew 8:16 then makes clear Jesus’ power over the spiritual world. Jesus is said to cast out demons by his word as well as healing everyone who came to him. Jesus’ word has authority over those who have been possessed by demons, showing that his power extends far beyond the people coming or brought to him. Further, with his word he heals not only the possessed, but any with physical or spiritual ailments. In this single line, Matthew shows the power of Jesus’ words over both the physical and spiritual realms to bring healing and restore wholeness.

The next miracle which explicitly mentions faith is that of the paralyzed man with the four friends who bring him to Jesus in 9:1-7 (par Mk. 2:1-12; Lk. 5:17-26). It is notable that when Jesus sees the faith of the friends that he responds, announcing that the paralytic’s sins “are forgiven.” Jesus’ response instantly brings out cries of “Blasphemy,”

309 Nolland, Matthew, 358.
but he is undeterred. In this pericope, he broadens the picture of his purpose, his mission. While many may have seen him as merely a healer, he impresses upon his audience that his mission is wholistic: to redeem the sick of Israel from their spiritual sickness, not merely from their physical illnesses. As Davies and Allison wryly comment, “Paralysis aptly dramatizes the stultifying effects of sin.” Matthew presents his twofold healing in response to the faith of the friends who brought the paralytic man to him: the persistent faith of these children of Israel allows Jesus the opportunity to reveal the deeper purpose of his mission to heal. Significantly, the persistence of the friends in spite of many obstacles bears witness to the reality of their faith. It is just such a faith, a faith that tears the roof off a building, to which Jesus responds.

The fourth miracle story to emphasize faith is that of the woman with the bleeding in 9:20-22, a story embedded in the narrative of Jairus’ daughter in all three of the Synoptic Gospels (Matt. 9:18-26; Mk. 5:21-43; Lk. 8:40-56). As Jesus passed on his way to Jairus’ house to heal his daughter, a woman battles the crowds to touch his cloak, believing that even a secondary contact like that could heal her. The Markan account specifies that Jesus feels the healing and turns, saying, “Be courageous, daughter: your faith has saved you (ἡ πίστη σου σώσεν σέ).” Matthew announces that she was “saved” (ἔσωκεν) from that hour. This verse makes the first connection of πίστη with σωζó. Blomberg argues that “Jesus originally spoke these words . . . to refer to both physical and spiritual wholeness.” Likewise, Stanley claims, “even here it is likely that physical healing also involves spiritual deliverance since Peter states in the book of Acts that Jesus healed . . .”

---

310 Davies and Allison, Matthew, 76.
311 Luomanen, Entering the Kingdom, 38. Luomanen notes this is one of the pericopes “where Matthew’s diction is based on Mark’s story.”
312 Craig L. Blomberg, “‘Your Faith Has Made You Whole’: The Evangelical Liberation Theology of Jesus,” in Jesus of Nazareth: Lord and Christ, ed. Joel Green and Max Turner (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1994), 76. He notes that Matthew’s redaction abbreviates the Markan version “so as better to highlight the woman’s faith” (78). Andries G. van Aarde, “ἸΗΣΟΥΣ, the Davidic Messiah, As Political Saviour in Matthew’s History,” in Salvation in the New Testament: Perspectives on Soteriology, ed. Jan G. van der Watt (Leiden: Brill, 2005), 19, views this story as “‘paradigmatic’ of the exclusivity of the ‘old’ Israel and the inclusivity of the Matthean community as the ‘new’ Israel,” particularly since this exemplifies the restoration of socially lower female (20).
all who had been oppressed by the devil (Acts 10:38). . . . We should therefore not be so quick to separate the physical from the spiritual."\textsuperscript{313} Regardless, it is the woman’s faith itself that is said to heal her: Jesus takes no active part in this story. Physical healing appears as a piece of salvation, an indication of the presence of the kingdom of God with all its wholeness. In contrast with chapter 8, here it is not Jesus’ word that heals, but his presence.

And finally, in one last pericope, the story of the two blind beggars in Matthew 9:27-29, again reveals the conjunction of healing and faith. These blind men followed Jesus, calling on him for mercy (9:27, \(\varepsilon\lambda\varepsilon\iota\sigma\nu\)), persisting in following even when Jesus did not respond to them. Instead of giving up, desperate for his touch they follow and persist in their request. Jesus first asks if they \(\pi\nu\sigma\tau\epsilon\upsilon\epsilon\tau\epsilon\) and then declares the healing would be \(\kappa\alpha\tau\alpha \ \tau\acute{\iota} \nu \ \pi\iota\sigma\tau\iota\nu\). Morris warns, “Jesus accompanies his healing touch with some words that underline the importance of faith. We should understand \textit{according to your faith} in the sense ‘since you have faith’ rather than thinking of strict proportionality (the meaning is not ‘the more faith, the better the result’; cf. 8:13).”\textsuperscript{314} “Faith” clearly has an element of mental assent, of content that is intellectually verifiable and accepted. As such, however, such a faith still encompasses how the blind men acted, for it leads them to follow and call out.\textsuperscript{315} Believing that Jesus could heal them would have benefited them nothing had they not followed and physically placed themselves completely at the mercy of Jesus. Their faith made them bold to call out and follow, and the truth of their faith was

\textsuperscript{313} Stanley, \textit{Jesus and Salvation by Works}, 135.
\textsuperscript{314} Morris, \textit{Matthew}, 234. He continues, “\textit{JB} renders, ‘your faith deserves it,’ but this makes of faith a merit instead of a trust in Jesus through which God’s good gift is received. . . . It is better to understand the words in the sense of the \textit{REB}, ‘as you have believed, so let it be.’”
\textsuperscript{315} This parallels the OT usage of \textit{\beta\nu\nu\rho\sigma\omicron\upsilon}, as described by Weiser (TDNT 6:186): “This contains subjective (theoretical) recognition and acknowledgment, but it also contains the practical subjection of the total person, in knowledge, will and conduct, to the claims of the relevant command. . . . The concept of \textit{\beta\nu\nu\rho\sigma\omicron\upsilon} embraces a twofold relation: recognition and acknowledgment of claim and reality, and the relation of the validity of this claim for him who says Amen to all its practical consequences.”
revealed in their restored vision. They called for mercy and received physical healing, indicating their understanding of mercy as related to restoration.

These stories reveal much about the kind of faith Jesus sought: wholehearted, fully-committed belief in him that was willing to rest everything on the truth of Jesus’ claims. No mere intellectual assent that Jesus was a fascinating teacher with many useful sayings suffices: it is to faith that gambles everything and risks looking foolish that Jesus responds. Novakovic warns, “although Jesus’ healings cannot authenticate his messianic vocation, they can facilitate human recognition of the messianic character of the time in which they take place and through this contribute to the revelation of Jesus’ messianic identity.”\footnote{Lidija Novakovic, Messiah, the Healer of the Sick: A Study of Jesus as the Son of David in the Gospel of Matthew (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2003), 190.} Jesus’ healing ministry reveals the power of Jesus’ word to bring in the wholeness of the Kingdom of God, and those who respond to him recognize his authority and react appropriately, both in belief and deed.


In Matthew 13:2-9, Jesus teaches the people the parable of the seed sown on differing grounds. In his explanation to his disciples in 13:18-23, the λόγος equates to the seed and bears the fruit, but requires a response. Jesus’ message about the kingdom of heaven is one of the prime themes of Matthew, beginning with the preaching of John in 3:2. John and Jesus both warn their audiences to “repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand/near.” Jesus’ incarnation brought God’s rule into a new relation to his people, calling them to repent and change their way of living.

In Matthew 13:19, however, Jesus calls his message τὸν λόγον τῆς βασιλείας.\footnote{Given the link to be discussed between λόγος and νόμος in James, this parable should be kept in mind in the interpretation of the νόμον βασιλικόν in James 2:8.} This word of the kingdom is to be comprehended, but the sign of understanding is that it then bears fruit. Luz observes, “Jesus’ parables are not simply meant to be theoretical.

Their significance points again and again to everyday life: they asked to be lived, not to be
grasped by the intellect.”318 We must note that it is not the quantity of the fruit that distinguishes the ones who understand from the ones who fail, but the fact that they bear fruit. Other seeds showed initial signs of growth, but because they fail before they reach the fruit bearing stage, they are considered to have failed entirely. So it is not the initial response that is crucial, according to this story, but the endurance in responding. Also, wealth is specifically listed as one of the main oppositions to the word, something that should be kept in mind when reading James. Hauerwas concludes, “It is hard to be a disciple and be rich. Surely, we may think, it cannot be that simple, but Jesus certainly seems to think it is that simple. The lure of wealth and the cares of the world produced by wealth quite simply darken and choke our imaginations.”319 Jesus presents a failure to understand and a fear of persecution or ostracism as two reasons people fall away from the faith early on. Wealth, however, is more insidious, as it chokes out those who have endured through the first two and could, by implication, even be said to have a root. Money, or a desire for it, stunts these people and keeps them from bearing fruit. Given the importance of good fruit for Matthew, this seems a deadly failure.

Davies and Allison note, “even if the synoptic interpretation does not derive from Jesus himself, it rightly catches his intention. The point is that people should hear and do the word Jesus speaks (cf. Mt 7.24-7).”320 The word that Jesus has taught is repentance and obedience to God’s kingdom as brought near by his own incarnation.321 It is noteworthy that, while interpreters generally agree that the sower represents God in some fashion and the seed corresponds to the word of God, the latter is sown far more broadly than is responded to and in some cases the recipients respond not at all (the seed on the path).

319 Hauerwas, Matthew, 128.
320 Davies and Allison, Matthew II, 375-76.
321 Ibid., 403, note that this parable has to do the failure of the Jews to respond to Jesus and his message. “Although the word of the kingdom is preached to all, all do not respond in the same way. . . . Opportunity does not guarantee response, proclamation does not abolish sin. This is the main message of 13.1-23, which in effect offers something similar to the free will defense for the problem of evil.”

98
Only in Luke’s version of the parable does the verb φύω appear (8:6, 8), referring to the seed that “grew” on the rocky soil and the good soil.\(^{322}\) Given the importance of Εἰμιφυτος in James and the rarity of this verb, it may not be a far stretch to see this parable in the background of James’ understanding of what it means to receive the word.

This parable teaches the necessity of human response to the divine action. Grace is offered freely in the widespread sowing, but only those who respond avail themselves of it. Those who believe and respond correctly, however, will bear fruit (καρποφορεῖ) in abundance, assumedly the fruit worthy of repentance (Matt. 3:8).

\textit{d. Conclusions}

At this point, it seems reasonable to conclude that Matthew closely links faith and faithfulness. There is intellectual assent, an acknowledgment of Jesus’ claims and teaching; that assent then drives the individual to a dramatic response. Those who hear the message of the kingdom and believe it, repent and live according to Jesus’ teaching. Bornkamm creates a distinction in Matthew between οἱ μαθηταί as the “disciples here and now,” whereas “it is not ‘the disciples’ but ‘the righteous’ who will shine like the sun” and stand at the right hand of the judge.\(^{323}\) The parables in chapters 24 and 25 teach that the faithful servants—so defined because they are constantly acting in readiness of his coming and in accordance with his λόγος—will “enter into the joy of the master” (25:21, 23). What a person believes leads to corresponding action; without the fruit, the faith is deemed useless.

\(^{322}\) φύω makes only one other appearance in the NT, in Hebrews 12:15. Davids, “James and Jesus,” 71, observes that “the parable of the sower may also be reflected [in James] in the idea of receiving the word (Luke 8:13) and in the strange use of Εἰμιφυτος which is probably influenced by the use of φύω in the parable. The parable, of course, supports James’ call to put away evil (in this case anger) by acting on (receiving) Jesus’ instruction. . . . The point James makes is that simply knowing the gospel (assuming this is the same word also mentioned in 1:18, 21) is not enough. One must act on it or obey it.”

\(^{323}\) Bornkamm, “End-Expectation,” 43.
3. Judgment and Mercy

a. General survey

As with the other main terms surveyed here, neither of the next terms appears before chapter 5. Ἐλεος and its cognates occur 15 times, seven referring to “mercy” in some theological aspect, three to almsgiving, and five to requests for healing. Of these, the first group is the most illuminating. Κρίνω and its related nouns, meanwhile, appear 22 times. The most common use appears to be admonitions of and allusions to the Day of Judgment (cf. Matt. 10:15; 11:22, 24; 12:36, 41, 42; 19:28), or warnings that judgment and its accompanying punishment is being earned (cf. Matt. 5:21, 22; 23:23). Judgment is most often warned on account of the people’s failure to recognize Jesus. In the quotation from Isaiah in 12:18-21, however, “justice” (κρίσις), is desired, the object of the hope that the servant fulfills. As we will see again when we examine the Sermon on the Mount and the judgment of the sheep and goats, justice is tied closely with acts of mercy.

b. Mercy, not Sacrifice: Matthew 9:13 and 12:7

Jesus’ use of the Hebrew prophets reveals the importance of human mercy in human-divine relations. Twice in Matthew Jesus quotes the prophetic statement “I desire mercy (ננה, Ἐλεος), not sacrifice” (Hos. 6:6). Matthew thus summarizes God’s relationship with his people, in which mercy to the helpless holds an essential place. Luz argues based on these quotations that “for Matthew in particular the prophets were also important witnesses for the love commandment.” Hagner says, “Hosea, speaking for Yahweh, put the emphasis upon mercy . . . even to the extent of denying the absolute importance of sacrifice. Mercy is a better way of obedience.” Mercy here refers at least in part to the practice of almsgiving. Jeremias observes, “Almsgiving played an important part in Jewish piety: ‘The more charity, the more peace’ (M. Ab. ii.7) was Hillel’s teaching.

---

324 Ulrich Luz, Matthew 1-7 (Minneapolis: Fortress, 2007), 213.
Compassion for one’s fellow men was regarded as a special characteristic of a descendent of Abraham (b. Betz. 32b).”326

Sacrifice signals one form of obedience, clearly, but in 9:13 Jesus calls those who overestimate it as the “righteous” whom he is not seeking. However, by echoing the words of Hosea, Jesus places a premium upon mercy as the way of showing obedience to God (cf. Matt. 25 below). Hays argues that these quotations reveal that:

The ‘hermeneutic of mercy’ supplants or relativizes the Law’s specific commandments (cf. Exod. 34:21). In these passages we see the outworking of Matthew’s earlier claim in the Sermon on the Mount that Jesus fulfills rather than negates the Law. When that formula is applied to test cases, such as eating with sinners and harvesting grain on the Sabbath, we see that the Law is understood to bear witness to what Matthew elsewhere calls ‘the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith’ (23:23). Jesus’ teaching provides a dramatic new hermeneutical filter that necessitates a rereading of everything in the Law in light of the dominant imperative of mercy. . . . Those who take upon themselves Jesus’ yoke are in effect taking up the yoke of the Torah as interpreted by Jesus, but his yoke—in light of his hermeneutic of mercy—is not burdensome.327

As Hays notes, this is not a replacement of the law, but an understanding that the double love commandment accords with the Hebrew prophets. Stanley notes, “Clearly there is a close relationships between love/mercy/treatment of others, and salvation in the NT, to the degree that where love is absent so too is salvation.”328 Sacrifice on its own is incomplete and inadequate, like love for God without love for neighbor.

c. Judgment based on one’s speech: Matthew 12:36-37

The importance of what one speaks cannot be overstated because speech and thinking, words and heart, thought and the action that embodies it are linked together. Speech is the clearest external indicator of a person’s heart, as Hays describes: “Speech and action are the outward manifestations of what is in the heart. . . . Action flows from character, but character is not so much a matter of innate disposition as of training in the

---

328 Stanley, Jesus and Salvation by Works, 332.
ways of righteousness.”329 Speech reveals one’s training, one’s developed character; therefore the act of speech counts as a work by which one is judged. “Words, like deeds, are indicators of a person’s relationship to Jesus and relationship to the kingdom.”330 Matthew 12:36-37 also links words and the outcome of the day of judgment: one’s words bring one justification (i.e. mercy) or condemnation, a fate possibly determined by careless speech.

The orientation of this judgment is future. Gathercole affirms, “In 12:37 the reference to justification is clearly in the context of an eschatological acquittal; it stands in contrast with condemnation, and both future tenses certainly refer to the eschatological future of the day of judgment.”331 In Matthew’s gospel, the future judgment motivates proper behavior now. This passage emphasizes that each person faces judgment based on how he has lived, and Matthew’s use of δικαιωθήσῃ and καταδικασθήσῃ forces us to take this warning seriously.


The final uses of πίστις and νόμος in the Gospel both occur in 23:23, in Jesus’ showdown with the Scribes and Pharisees.332 In the fourth of seven “woes,” Jesus warns the scribes and Pharisees that they are doomed because they tithed herbs and spices, but forgot “the weightier things of the law, justice (τὴν κρίσιν) and mercy (τὸ ἔλεος) and faith (τὴν πίστιν).” Tithing is right, but is not of first importance. Jesus condemns the leaders for missing their priorities: tithing had replaced a manner of living in reflection of

329 Hays, Moral Vision, 99. He continues, “In this respect, Matthew’s moral vision has much in common with Israel’s wisdom tradition, though Matthew is more concerned with community formation than with the cultivation of wisdom and virtue in the individual.”
330 Hagner, Matthew 1-13, 351.
331 Simon J. Gathercole, “The Doctrine of Justification in Paul and Beyond: Some Proposals,” in Justification in Perspective: Historical Developments and Contemporary Challenges, ed. Bruce L. McCormack (Grand Rapids: Baker Academic, 2006), 232-33. He adds, “the description of justification that we saw in the Matthean saying is, mutatis mutandis, very close to what we saw in the Epistle of James. James, as is well known, makes the point very explicitly that justification is not by faith alone but by works (James 2:24). As the context makes clear, James understands justification to be linked to future salvation, much as in Matthew’s gospel.”
332 Jackson-McCabe, Logos and Law, 183-84, also points to this saying as helping us understand how “the cultic instruction preserved in Matthew’s sermon . . . assumes participation in the Jewish cult, but subordinates it to social concerns.”
God’s character. Luz sees this verse as meaning “simply what Matthew had named as the highest commandment: love (22:34-40; cf. 5:21-26, 43-48; 7:12).” This verse pulls “faith” into the realm of “faithfulness,” something enacted and visible, rather than a belief system. Luz explains further:

The important commandments are formulated into a group of three in biblical, especially prophetic, language. Justice (κρίσις) corresponds to the biblical ἕλεος. . . “Mercy” (ἔλεος), a word that he has used twice from Hos 6:6 (9:13; 12:7), means, for example, “works of charity” such as those named in the great portrayal of the last judgment (Matt 25:35-39, 42-44). As early as 5:7 Matthew had pronounced the merciful blessed, and in 12:1-8 he had contrasted mercy with the Sabbath observance of the Pharisees that neglects human needs. Finally, “faithfulness/faith” (πίστις) here cannot mean faith in Jesus, nor can it mean the faith of prayer or the active faith that performs works of love, for faith is never for Matthew the essence of the requirements of the law. Instead, we are to understand πίστις in the tradition of biblical language, but also as it is understandable for Greeks, as “faithfulness.” . . Jesus represents the Bible’s prophetic heritage more than its priestly-cultic heritage.

Nolland supplements this description, “If Mic. 6:8 is the model (it has a list of three items and starts with ‘justice’ and ‘mercy’ as does Matthew), then ‘faith’ would be analogous to Micah’s ‘walk humbly with your God’,” but then cautions: “Matthew makes clear that a prophet-like focus on justice and mercy is not antithetical to even the minutiae of cultic practice: ‘and not abandoned the others’.” Jesus did not abolish the ritual in favor of the moral law: the two hold together in a proper balance.

In a prophetic style denunciation, Jesus condemns the scribes and Pharisees for their failure to understand the so-called “weightier” things of the law: the triumvirate of justice, mercy, and faith. Mott notes two points: “(1) Jesus carries on the prophetic attack on the piety which leaves out social justice. (2) He clearly indicates the place of the Old Testament teachings about justice: they reflect the highest level of Old Testament ethics

333 Luz, Matthew 21-28, 124.
334 Ibid.
335 Nolland, Matthew, 937-38. He explains the list thus: “Though Matthew’s list is not identical to any OT list, it has a family likeness to various attempts to give a set of principles that would sum up the whole will of God. κρίσις as ‘justice’ has appeared in Matthew only in 12:18 and 20, in the quotation from Is. 42:1-4, but that must be its sense here. ἔλεος (‘mercy’) is identified as a matter of central concern in the uses of Ho. 6:6 in Mt. 9:13; 12:7. And in both these texts the Pharisees are identified with a lack of ‘mercy’. To create a uniform set πίστις here should mean ‘faithfulness’ rather than ‘faith’ (as it mostly does in the LXX). But since Matthew otherwise uniformly uses πίστις to mean ‘faith’, this possibility must be considered also for Mt. 23:23.”
and are essential to his new order.” This verse proves crucial to understanding Jesus. He affirms the central importance in the Law of acting justly, mercifully, and faithfully. They are not lesser commands equal to tithing one’s spices; rather, the commands to care for the poor and disenfranchised are vital to life in the covenant. These leaders are condemned for failing to practice these principles despite holding to the particulars of the law. They failed to understand the law and thereby God.

**v. Conclusions**

This section is perhaps the hardest to summarize neatly, because all three of the “in-depth” sections to come speak to judgment and mercy. But we can draw two initial conclusions. First, Jesus emphasizes merciful actions towards others, highlighting love of neighbor as essential to covenant faithfulness. Secondly, Jesus warns his audience of a future judgment, wherein one is judged on the habits and character one builds during this lifetime. In this judgment, one’s sacrifices and tithing count less than the more “wisdom” priorities of a controlled tongue and a merciful character.

**C. Closer Readings**

While the previous discussions contribute to the intersections and developments of the themes central to James, three passages in particular may lie in the background of James’ thought, and as such deserve further treatment. These are the Sermon on the Mount (Matt. 5-7), the parable of the unmerciful servant (Matt. 18:21-35), and the judgment of the sheep and the goats (Matt. 25:31-46).

---

The Sermon on the Mount forms a most significant block of teaching for James. Morgan argues that every major teaching in James parallels instruction from the Sermon, thus we will readily see all the key themes in this section.

**a. The Beatitudes: Matthew 5:5-12**

The Beatitudes introduce the character of God’s people. Jesus reveals a correspondence, presumably from God, for the people who behave according to kingdom manners. Hauerwas views the macarisms in a community setting:

That Jesus declares such people “blessed” indicates that the transformed world has begun with the proclamation that “the kingdom of heaven has come near.” Each of the Beatitudes names a gift, but it is not presumed that everyone who is a follower of Jesus will possess each beatitude. Rather, the gifts named in the Beatitudes suggest that the diversity of these gifts will be present in the community of those who have heard Jesus’s call to discipleship.

This view does not, however, seem to encompass Jesus’ teaching elsewhere that everyone be merciful and his warnings that all of those who follow him will endure persecution for following him. These macarisms seem less a “gift list” than a call to character. Hauerwas correctly observes, however, that these traits flourish because of the nearness of the kingdom. Likewise, the nearness of the kingdom encourages those striving to live out these descriptions.

---

337 Hans Dieter Betz, *Essays on the Sermon on the Mount*, trans. L. L. Welborn (Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1985), 42, relegates the text of the Sermon to a “secondary literary creation, a critical compilation of sayings of Jesus that have been recognized as decisive for instruction in proper theological thought and practice,” therefore needing some distinction between “three kinds of ‘texts’:” the actual words of Jesus, the text as we have it, and the text as it is applied. Despite his distinctions and his warning that the author here chooses “to differentiate the path chosen by the author of the SM from the directions pursued by other early Christian groups” (43)—thus presenting a combative view of early Christianity—if the sermon is a compilation of ethical teaching, that makes it eminently suitable as a compendium of Jesus’ wisdom sayings.


340 Hagner, “Holiness and Ecclesiology,” 175, agrees: “The beatitude of 5:10, ‘Blessed are those who are persecuted for righteousness’ sake,’ has in view the ethical righteousness of those who follow Jesus. . . . The parallelism between 5:10 and 5:11 is striking, where ἐνεκὲν δικαιοσύνης (‘on account of righteousness’) parallels ἐνεκὲν ἐμοῦ (‘on account of me’). Righteousness is associated with relationship to Jesus.”
For this study, perhaps the most significant macarism is Matthew 5:7, Μακάριοι οἱ ἔλεημονες, ὡς αὐτοὶ ἔλεηθησονται.341 With this one simple macarism, Jesus mandates that God’s people must practice mercy in order to receive mercy from God. Simply put, Jesus creates a positive lex talionis, a quid pro quo relationship of divine mercy toward the merciful. The principle here “is also paralleled in Mt 6.12-15; 7.1-5; 18.21-35; Mk 11.25; and t. B. Qam. 9.30: ‘As long as you are merciful, the Merciful One is merciful to you.’”342

Davies and Allison add:

perhaps throughout Matthew (including 5.7) ‘mercy’ and its cognates imply that merciful action is the concrete expression of loyalty to God, and that what God demands is not so much activity directed Godward (‘I desire … not sacrifice’) but loving-kindness benefitting other people (‘I desire mercy’).

They then argue that the passive ἔλεηθησονται does refer to “the hope of receiving mercy at the last judgement.”343 Hagner warns: “Implicit in this beatitude is the judgment upon the wicked oppressors, i.e., the ones who have not shown mercy: to them mercy will not be shown (cf. Jas 2:13).” 344 This statement falls in line with the wisdom tradition: those who practice mercy to others will, in the future, receive mercy from God.

b. Fulfilling the Law and the "Antitheses": Matthew 5:17-48

In Matthew 5:17-48, Jesus establishes his relationship to the law as he begins the main body of his teaching. He warns in 5:17, Ἔννοιάσητε ὡς ἡλθον καταλύσαι τὸν νόμον ἢ τοὺς προφήτας: οὐκ ἡλθον καταλύσαι ἀλλὰ πληρώσαι. Jesus’ relation to the law in Matthew is notoriously complex. Regarding this passage, David Wenham asks,

---

341 The macarism provides the positive equivalent to James’ proverb in 2:12a: mercy is the promised reward of the merciful. While Deppe, Sayings of Jesus, 99, remains unconvinced that this verse lies in the background of James’ saying, he does concede that both this saying of Jesus and that of James appear drawn “from a common tradition of Jewish wisdom,” thus fitting it within the trajectory seen thus far. Hagner, Matthew 1-13, 93, notes two parallels from Proverbs, “Prov 14:21b reads ἔλεος δὲ παρακάτω συναντάται, ‘blessed is the one who has mercy on the poor’ (cf. Prov 17:5c, a phrase only in the LXX text: δὲ ἐπιστάσεις ἐλεήθησεται, ‘the one who has compassion will be shown mercy’).” This second parallel seems particularly relevant, although its absence from the Hebrew may explain why it is not often cited.


343 Ibid., 455.

344 Hagner, Matthew 1-13, 94.
“Why bother to say that Jesus has not come to destroy the law and the prophets and that he expects a higher righteousness than that of the scribes and Pharisees? Surely because some people argued that Jesus by his teaching or his way of life was undermining the law and the prophets and lowering the moral standards.”

Contrarily, Luz argues that here, “Matthew has appropriated a Jewish Christian tradition that demand the keeping of all individual commandments of the Torah and excludes material criticism of Torah commandments.” Luz, however, holds a minority position.

Until this point of the Sermon, Jesus’ statements are remarkably inoffensive as regards the law, unless, as Deines suggests: “In the Beatitudes, people are promised participation in the kingdom of God without the Law and the prophets. The keeping of the Law is not mentioned at all. . . . how dare Jesus promise something like that to people without connecting the promise to the keeping of the Law as an expression of God’s will

345 David Wenham, “The Rock on Which to Build: Some Mainly Pauline Observations about the Sermon on the Mount,” in *Built Upon the Rock: Studies in the Gospel of Matthew*, ed. Daniel M. Gurtner, and John Nolland (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 2008), 200. “We know that people did accuse Jesus exactly in those terms for his liberal attitudes to the Sabbath and for mixing with sinners. . . . It is in response to that sort of accusation that Jesus in 5:17-20 replies very forcefully that he is not destroying the law and the prophets or lowering standards. No, he is ‘fulfilling’ them, bringing in the full righteousness to which they are pointing and going even higher than the scribes and Pharisees.” See also Suggs, *Wisdom, Christology and Law*, 119. He adds that in the antitheses, “Matthew has broken through the tension between the law and the life of the Spirit. Christ is not set over against the law, but identified with it. . . . what is involved here is not merely a principle of interpretation but the issue of authority” (119-20).

346 Luz, *Matthew 1-7*, 221. “He not only appropriated it; he also intensively edited it and placed it at a prominent place in his Sermon on the Mount. That fits in well with the basic intention of the Matthean v. 17 that speaks primarily of the fulfillment of the law through Jesus’ obedience and life. The conclusion seems unavoidable that the ‘fulfilling of the law’ in v. 17 must first of all be interpreted on the basis of vv. 18-19. What is then meant is the faithfulness to every individual commandment of the Torah.” While he concedes that “The love commandment is at the heart of the Torah, [and] the ceremonial laws are secondary,” he concludes, “they are all parts of the law that Jesus fulfills in its entirety. Verses 17-19 are a ‘Jewish Christian program’ of great conciseness.” See also Ulrich Luz, “The Fulfillment of the Law in Matthew (Matt. 5:17-20),” in *Studies in Matthew*, ed. Ulrich Luz (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 2005), particularly 185-220 and his essay there entitled “The Fulfillment of the Law in Matthew (Matt. 5:17-20).”

347 Cf. Roland Deines, “Not the Law but the Messiah: Law and Righteousness in the Gospel of Matthew — An Ongoing Debate,” in *Built Upon the Rock: Studies in the Gospel of Matthew*, ed. Daniel M. Gurtner, and John Nolland (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 2008), 64. Davies and Allison, *Matthew 1*, 492, argue, “there were those who recognized the relative freedom of the Gentiles and yet at the same time believed that those born as Jews should remain within the law and Jewish traditions (so James, and Cephas, and John according to Gal 2; also probably Paul. . . ). Matthew, we should like to think, belonged to this third group. For him, the law was still to be observed by Jewish Christians (5.17-20; 23.3), but such was not necessary for the Gentiles.”
and Israel’s covenant.” Contra Luz, the question about Jesus setting aside the law is valid, given the crowd’s astonishment at his authoritative teaching in Matthew 7:28-29.

The general consensus is that Jesus does modify the Law in his teaching, signified in his use of πληρόω. Davies and Allison note that in Matthew πληρόω generally refers to Jesus as the fulfillment of an OT prophecy, but that “he who fulfills the law and the prophets displaces them in so far as he must become the centre of attention: the thing signified (Jesus) is naturally more important than the sign (the law and the prophets) pointing to it. . . . [But also] if the law is fulfilled, it cannot on that account be set aside.

Fulfillment can only confirm the Torah’s truth, not cast doubt upon it.” Meier, however, understands Matthew to be asking a nuanced question, not “what is the relation of this man Jesus to the center of our religion, the Mosaic Law,” but “what is the relation of the Mosaic Law to the center of our religion, the Lord Jesus,” thereby inverting the question within the text’s Christian context. This change of focus acknowledges the shock of Jesus’ original hearers, but also anticipates the forthcoming teaching. In 5:17-20, Jesus

---

348 Deines, “Not the Law,” 73. “While the goal of the Law and the prophetic hope, namely ‘righteousness,’ is mentioned twice (5:6, 10), the traditional and expected way to this goal, namely the keeping of the Law, is not referred to. . . . This immediately raises the question (and not only for a Pharisee or scribe)” of Jesus’ relation to the Law.

349 Banks, Jesus and the Law, 242, argues that the first significant fulfillment of the law occurred “in his teaching and practice, though those, of course, ultimately culminated in the Cross.” He adds that Jesus shows no indication of dividing between ritual and moral law, but rather “in the teaching and ministry of Jesus the whole Law found its fulfilment and no part of it remains unchanged” (243).

350 Davies and Allison, Matthew I, 486-87. They observe: “It is at once clear from 5.21-48 that Jesus proffers new demands . . . so πληρόω must at least be consistent with a transcending of the Mosaic law. At the same time, the verb almost certainly has prophetic content, for (i) Matthew uses πληρόω most frequently to express the fulfillment of an OT prophecy by Jesus (the formula quotations); (ii) ‘and the prophets’ has been added to ‘the law’ in 5.17, which proves that the evangelist is thinking of prophecy; (iii) in 11.13 a verse from Q is edited with the result that the Torah prophesies (‘the prophets and the law prophesied until John’), and this implies that the Torah could be fulfilled just as the prophets could. . . . So when Jesus declares, ‘I came. . . . to fulfill’, he means that his new teaching brings to realization that which the Torah anticipated or prophesied. . . . while Jesus’ new demands may surpass the demands of the OT, the two are not contradictory. . . . Rather do the words of the Torah remain the words of God (cf. 15.4), their imperatival force undiminished (cf. 5.18; 23.23).”

351 John P. Meier, The Vision of Matthew: Christ, Church and Morality in the First Gospel (NY: Paulist Press, 1979), 63. He continues, “Matthew answers that question in 5:17-20 in terms of eschatological fulfillment of Law and prophecy, with the fulfillment of Law understood in analogy to the fulfillment of prophecy.” See his expanded discussion in pp. 224-28. Matthew 11:13 confirms the ability of the Law to “prophecy,” stating, πάντες γὰρ οἱ προφῆται καὶ οἱ νόμοι ἔχουσιν ἐπιρρήτευσαν. The Law is not a static entity given once by God to dictate behavior, but rather it actively points toward a goal. As such, not only can the Prophets be fulfilled, but so also can the Law.

108
clarifies the validity and continuing importance of the Law but establishes his role as its intended fulfillment, giving him the right—as its intended fulfillment—to determine the Law.\textsuperscript{352}

In Matthew 5:19-20, Jesus affirms this “greater” righteousness in keeping the law for any who wish to attain the kingdom.\textsuperscript{353} With this, Matthew concludes the section in which he affirms the Law and calls for perfect obedience in order to receive eternal life. Davies and Allison muse that “5.20 may not so much anticipate unique teaching as enjoin readers to do, to act, to be. The better righteousness is the righteousness of action—based, of course, on the words of Jesus,” this in contrast to those who do not live out what they teach.\textsuperscript{354} Jesus warns those who teach anything but the full law that they will be “least in the kingdom.”\textsuperscript{355} This may be contrasted to Matthew 18:6 (par. Mk. 9:42; Lk. 17:2), where false teachers are warned of the dangers of their unfaithfulness in far more damning language. Stanton suggests that “the warning in 5.19 . . . may refer to the sayings of Jesus, rather than (as in the more usual interpretation) the law.”\textsuperscript{356} Such a division would set up the “antitheses” as indeed Jesus’ new law in Matthew.

\textsuperscript{352} Betz, \textit{Sermon on the Mount}, 43, defines Matthew’s use of πληροῦν here as “insisting that Jesus’ interpretation of the Torah was and is ‘orthodox’ in the Jewish sense: his teaching, like that of any other orthodox teacher, was not in itself Torah but merely its interpretation, the sole purpose of which was to fulfill the will of God.”

\textsuperscript{353} Dunn, \textit{Unity}, 246, observes, “Matthew’s attitude to the law comes to clearest expression in 5.17-19. These were probably three independent logia which Matthew himself has joined together. . . . Matthew clearly understands them in terms of continuing loyalty to the law, that is, for him, the law as interpreted by Jesus. Whatever Jesus himself may have meant by any talk of fulfilling the law, he is not to be understood as superseding it, or leaving it behind. On the contrary, ‘fulfilment’ is defined by the antithesis with ‘destroy’. . . . Here clearly the law as ‘realized’ by Jesus retains an unconditional validity for those who belong to the kingdom of heaven; and here too is a firm rebuke to other members of the kingdom (other Christians—Matt 8.11) who were more liberal in their attitude to the law. Matthew’s high regard for the law is also expressed in two words distinctive in his vocabulary,” namely \textit{anomia} and \textit{dikaiosune}.

\textsuperscript{354} Davies and Allison, \textit{Matthew I}, 498-99, continuing: “the contrast in 5.20 between two types of righteousness [may have] as much or more to do with doing than with teaching. The previous verse, 5.19, is about doing, and when Jesus elsewhere speaks of the scribes and Pharisees, he typically refers to their ‘hypocrisy’ (e.g. 15.7; 22.18; 23.13-15, 28). The slur presupposes that they really do know better. So in Matthew the main problem with the Jewish leaders is not that they do not know the difference between right and wrong, it is instead simply that, knowing what they should do, they do something else.” This comment corresponds with James’ concern that his audience not merely be “hearers of the word” but “doers.”

\textsuperscript{355} Luomanen, \textit{Entering the Kingdom}, 91, argues that Matthew 5:19 does not teach relative positions in heaven but rather the importance of the Law.

Hagner warns that this obedience “is not to be understood quantitatively (contra Luz)—that is, that the righteousness Jesus speaks of does not come through a greater preoccupation with the minutiae of the law that outdoes even the Pharisees.”  

Instead, he argues, “Jesus expects . . . a new and higher kind of righteousness that rests upon the presence of the eschatological kingdom he brings and that finds its definition and content in his definitive and authoritative exposition of the law.” In light of Jesus’ creation/kingdom righteousness, Betz’s theory that this section of the Sermon as well as the warning against false prophets in 7:15-20 is directed against Paul and the law-free Gentile mission seems very doubtful.

In this context, however, the difficulty lies in extrapolating whether Jesus meant to say that the “kingdom of heaven” is a reward earned by those righteous enough, or whether there might be a sort of “covenantal nomism” in effect, whereby Jesus—as the new Moses—addresses his new legal code to those already “in” (the disciples) and warns them that to remain “in” they must maintain the righteousness that he teaches.

In Traditions and Interpretation in the New Testament, ed. Gerald F. Hawthorne and Otto Betz (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1987), 183, comments, “it is unlikely that 5:17 is directly polemical,” pulling in evidence from Matt1 10:34 where similar language, but no obvious opposition community, is in play.

Hays, Moral Vision, 422, understands Matthew to be defending the fledgling Christian movement from claims of antinomianism: “The remarkable claim in Matthew 5:17-20 that Jesus has come not to abolish the Law and the prophets but to fulfill them must be read in the context of the late-first-century struggle for ownership of Israel’s heritage. No doubt the early Jewish Christians were being accused by their Jewish contemporaries of being ‘soft’ on Law observance. Matthew responds by formulating, in the opening of the Sermon on the Mount, a programmatic denial of the charge. . . . Not only is the charge false that Jesus sponsors antinomianism, but in fact he demands a standard of legal obedience more stringent than that of the scribes and Pharisees, . . . a more radical interpretation of the Law that fulfills the Law by dealing with the orientation of the heart. The scribes and Pharisees dabble with superficial concerns, suggests Matthew, but Jesus exposes the deep intention of the Law.”

---

357 Hagner, Matthew 1-13, 109.
358 Ibid., 109. He warns that “the larger context of the verse (e.g., the grace of the beatitudes) forbids us to conclude that entrance into the kingdom depends, in a cause-effect relationship, upon personal moral attainments. This verse is addressed, it must be remembered, to those who are the recipients of the kingdom.”
359 Betz, Sermon on the Mount, 20-21. He argues that 5:19 is a direct attack on Paul, while 7:15-20 is “aimed at those Christian prophets who do not do the works of the Law. . . . The community of the SM is, without doubt, a Jewish-Christian minority in distress. Without lie the hostile forces of non-Jewish paganism. Gentile Christianity of a Pauline stamp, with its freedom from the law, has a bewitching harm; they are ‘wolves in sheep’s clothing.’” In contrast, Graham N. Stanton, “The Origin and Purpose of Matthew’s Sermon on the Mount,” in Tradition and Interpretation in the New Testament, ed. Gerald F. Hawthorne and Otto Betz (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1987), 183, comments, “it is unlikely that 5:17 is directly polemical,” pulling in evidence from Matt1 10:34 where similar language, but no obvious opposition community, is in play.
360 Hays, Moral Vision, 422, understands Matthew to be defending the fledgling Christian movement from claims of antinomianism: “The remarkable claim in Matthew 5:17-20 that Jesus has come not to abolish the Law and the prophets but to fulfill them must be read in the context of the late-first-century struggle for ownership of Israel’s heritage. No doubt the early Jewish Christians were being accused by their Jewish contemporaries of being ‘soft’ on Law observance. Matthew responds by formulating, in the opening of the Sermon on the Mount, a programmatic denial of the charge. . . . Not only is the charge false that Jesus sponsors antinomianism, but in fact he demands a standard of legal obedience more stringent than that of the scribes and Pharisees, . . . a more radical interpretation of the Law that fulfills the Law by dealing with the orientation of the heart. The scribes and Pharisees dabble with superficial concerns, suggests Matthew, but Jesus exposes the deep intention of the Law.”
does it prove that Matthew would be a pure legalist.” Van Aarde observes, “The command for surpassing righteousness implies that like Jesus, the disciples have to radically obey the will of the Father in heaven, which is accomplished through doing it.” Matthew 5:17-20 requires of Jesus’ followers a deep obedience to the Law—the definition of which will be nuanced throughout the text—if they are to receive the Kingdom. Jesus demands not simply law but law’s fulfillment: a new ethic based in his very own life.

As the one who fulfills the law, Jesus reveals the righteousness of the kingdom in the Sermon. Deines summarizes the general scholarly feeling that the subsequent teaching has been given an incorrect name, saying, “the designation ‘antitheses’ is not helpful at all. Jesus does not set his teaching against the Torah, but explains through examples how the eschatological righteousness based on his fulfillment of the Law and the prophets (5:17-20) looks. The ‘antitheses’ are therefore to be seen as the guiding norms for the kingdom of God.” According to Deines, the antitheses are not in conflict with the Torah, but rather teach the path—and cost—of righteousness.

In contrast, Meier argues that “in three cases . . . Jesus revokes the letter of the Law and replaces it with his own diametrically opposed command. . . . As regards the Law and authority over it, Jesus stands where God stands.” Wenham argues that Matthew’s Jesus intensifies the OT call to perfection:

In God’s kingdom the standard is, of course: “You therefore must be perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect” (5:48). So was Jesus undermining the Old

---

361 Luomanen, Entering the Kingdom, 92.
362 van Aarde, “ΙΗΣΟΥΣ,” 15.
363 Twice in the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus threatens judgment to those who fail to obey God’s law, even within their thoughts (5:21-22, 27-29). Both times, he not only intensifies the commands but also threatens damnation as the result of failure. This sort of teaching indicates that the final judgment rests on more than strictly faith in Jesus, unless, of course, one takes the position of Davies and Allison, Matthew I, 516, who view this last line of extreme punishment as a Matthean redaction. Hagner, Matthew 1-13, 121, comments, “discipleship of the kingdom is a serious matter that requires true, i.e., unreserved, absolute, commitment.”
364 Deines, “Not the Law,” 64. He does then add the slightly contradictory statement: “They do not abrogate the Torah of Moses, but they make it in a way superfluous. Whenever Jesus’ followers live according to what is demanded of them, the regulations of the Torah are no longer needed.”
365 Contra Porter, “Sermon on the Mount in James,” 353, who sees Jesus’ “antitheses” behind James’ “law of freedom,” stating the cliché, “Under the pharisaic interpretation of the Law the people were enslaved, but Jesus’ interpretation gave freedom to the people.”
366 Meier, Vision of Matthew, 64.
Testament law and moral standards? Exactly the opposite: he was bringing in the kingdom of God, in which the standard is perfection. Seen in this context, the Sermon on the Mount is not depressingly difficult legalism. Rather, it is a description of kingdom-of-heaven living, as well as a call to the disciples to live out their discipleship and their sonship of the heavenly Father. . . . The starting point is in the first four beatitudes—the acknowledgment of spiritual need and the seeking of God’s righteousness. . . . This righteousness represents the fulfillment of the law and the prophets. 367

Jesus does not abrogate the Law, because the standard of perfection and holiness to which God has consistently called his people (cf. Ex. 19:6; Lev. 11:45; 19:2; 20:7, 8, 26; etc.) has not changed. 368 While Luomanen concludes that “the starting point for Matthew is to show that Jesus does not question the OT law” even as “the openly Jewish program in verses 5:17-20 has turned into the teaching of Jesus’ commandments (28:16-20),” 369 Matthew instead presents a Christocentric view of the OT Law. The arrival, death and resurrection of Jesus inaugurated the kingdom of God, and so Jesus explains the righteousness of the kingdom. As the one to whom the Law and Prophets pointed, Jesus has the right to define the law of the kingdom of God that he inaugurates. Macaskill argues, in “the so-called antitheses . . . the ethical standards derive from the original design of creation. Moreover, it seems arguable that the standards are, more specifically, based upon the idea that man and woman are made in/as God’s likenesses.” 370 The Christ law, the law of the kingdom, springs from the creation principle of humanity in the imago dei, a reality that shapes every interaction.

This is perhaps best captured in Matthew 5:44 and 48: ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς ἐχθροὺς ὑμῶν καὶ προσεύχεσθε ὑπὲρ τῶν διωκόντων ὑμᾶς. . . . ἐσεσθε οὖν ὑμεῖς τέλειοι ως ο πατὴρ ὑμῶν ὁ οὐράνιος τέλειος ἐστιν. Taking the traditional lex talionis and turning it on its head, Jesus demands love instead of

368 Throughout Matthew 5-7, Jesus makes a clear connection to the Jewish legal code, referring specifically to two of the Decalogue (5:21, 27) as well as to many of the “lesser” laws such as those concerning divorce (5:31, cf. Deut. 24:1), oath-taking (5:33; cf. Deut. 6:13), love of neighbor (5:43; cf. Lev. 19:18), and fasting (6:16; cf. Is. 58:33; Joel 2:12; Zech. 8:9, in which texts fasting appears as a regular part of life and religion).
369 Luomanen, Entering the Kingdom, 88, 87.
370 Macaskill, Revealed Wisdom, 186.
proportionality. Instead of leaving room for like-responses, Jesus instigates a revolution in which reactions are to be anything but proportional: generosity with those who would take, non-response to those who would fight, love for enemies, prayer for tormentors: this is a love that extends beyond anything “natural,” as the examples in vv. 46-47 demonstrate.

These commands, however, are rooted in the character of God (vv. 45, 48) and the final verse thus calls for “perfection” or “wholeness”—growth in the *imitatio dei*. Jesus simply repeats God’s command in Leviticus 11:44-45 (19:2; 20:7, 26; etc.), encapsulating the Hebrew notions of holiness with the growing concept of *τέλειος*, perfection. Martens explains, “The praxis of God’s people is never detached from the basic premise of God’s holiness, which entails morality and ethics (Lev. 19:2; Matt. 5:48).” Jesus’ standard for his follower’s relational conduct is the Father, who does not function by the apparently petty *lex talionis*. Davis ties together this whole pericope:

> Jesus’ ethic surpasses both the ethics of the Jewish populace and leadership and goes beyond the teaching of what was contained and required in the OT Law. . . . Jesus’ instruction represents a new perspective, different from that of the OT *lex talionis* texts or NT-era Judaism. Thus, Jesus’ teaching represents a new and higher standard of righteousness and is directly tied to the introduction of the promised eschatological kingdom.

Ultimately, as van Aarde says, “Matthean ethics centres on Jesus’ words ‘be *τέλειοι* as your heavenly Father is *τέλειος*’ (Matt 5:48). Integrity makes *inner life* correspond with *outer behaviour*, a wholeness which is rooted in one’s *whole* being.” Perfection—a key term for James—springs from the implementation of this fulfillment ethic. Jesus fulfills and

---

371 Banks, *Jesus and the Law*, 244, warns against giving too high a priority to the love-commandment, noting that here “the OT love-commandment is not only surpassed by the new instruction Jesus gives, but is only one among several other antitheses some of which would be extremely difficult to subsume under the heading of ‘love.’”


373 Davis, *Lex Talionis*, 167. He adds, “While a measure of attention-getting language may exist, that Jesus intended these types of examples to be lived in a concrete fashion is borne out not only by the straightforwardness of the teaching, and its direct applicability in its historical context, but also the example of nonresistance that Jesus repeatedly exhibited when he was physically offended by the ‘evil person’ during his ministry.”

then teaches his followers to complete the kingdom ethic of love: *imitatio dei* for the *imago dei*.

In this respect, Matthew 7:12 also fits within this discussion, for here Jesus declares that to treat others as one wishes to be treated *ἐστιν ὁ νόμος καὶ οἱ προφήται*. In many ways, this is again an inverse *lex talionis*. Instead of a negative, proportional warning, he gives a positive statement, an encouragement to act *as one would wish to have done* to one.

Jesus views the law as the guide by which people regulate their interactions with others. As McKnight concludes, “For Jesus, morality is no longer *just Torah but now it is Torah as defined by love.*”

This aphorism concludes a section regarding personal interactions, and here Jesus summarizes the guiding principle of the Law and the Prophets regarding relationships. This standard governs people’s tendency to judge the “other” and condemn, but also comes in response to God’s principle of giving good gifts to those who ask. Again, Jesus’ fulfillment of the law does not create a new law by which one can safely consider oneself “in,” but creates an ethic of transformation by which the righteous are shaped to the values of the kingdom, the *imitatio dei*.


Twice within the Sermon, Jesus teaches about proportionality. The first comes within the “Lord’s Prayer” and its subsequent explanation regarding forgiveness, while the second initiates a section on judging and interpersonal interactions in chapter 7. Both these teachings serve to encourage and also to warn the hearer that, to an extent at least, God deals with his people in accordance with the character they choose to display.

First, in the middle of the Prayer, Jesus teaches: *ἀφες ἡμῖν τὰ ὀφειλήματα ἡμῶν, ωσ καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀφήκαμεν τοῖς ὀφειλέταις ἡμῶν*, continuing with the explanation that as we forgive (*ἐὰν γὰρ*), we will be forgiven by God in heaven—or not

375 McKnight, “Parting in the Ways,” 96.
Hagner argues that “it is a given that God’s forgiveness is always prior,” an argument that cannot be supported by this particular text but that derives its support from the parable in Matthew 18. Here, Jesus gives no indication of God’s initial call or forgiveness. He simply points to the future judgment and warns that we are forgiven only insofar as we ourselves forgive others. France warns against too great an emphasis on the time-sequence, viewing this as primarily a warning against “the insincerity of a prayer for forgiveness from an unforgiving disciple.”

It is significant that Jesus chooses only the one line of the prayer to explain, with its simplicity of reciprocity of forgiveness or judgment. Within Jesus’ prayer itself is the recognition that when one asks for forgiveness, it will be given to that one και, in proportion—or at least in like manner—to his or her own willingness to release others from their debts. Here Hauerwas reminds us, “The forgiveness of debts signals that nothing is quite so political as the prayer that Jesus teaches us. . . . [challenging] our normal economic and political assumption.” Matthew then switches vocabulary from ὀφείλημα within the prayer to παράπτωμα in the explanation. It may well be a vocabulary shift simply for literary purposes; the latter term broadens the application for those who might wish to narrowly apply Jesus’ statement to financial transactions. Therefore, while the economic and political would be an appropriate outcome, Davies and Allison remind us pragmatically of the communal nature of this prayer: “The right of the eschatological

---

376 Hagner, Matthew 1-13, 152, observes, “It is clear from these verses that a direct connection exists between God’s forgiveness and our forgiveness. . . . These verses are a forceful way of making the significant point that it is unthinkable—impossible—that we can enjoy God’s forgiveness without in turn extending our forgiveness toward others.”

377 France, Matthew, 136. He adds, “The point is not so much that forgiving is a prior condition of being forgiven, but that forgiveness cannot be a one-way process. Like all God’s gifts, it brings responsibility; it must be passed on. . . . There can be no question, of course, of our forgiving being in proportion to what we are forgiven, as 18:23-35 makes clear” (137).

378 Hauerwas, Matthew, 79.

community to utter the Lord’s Prayer depends, as does the efficacy of the prayer, upon communal reconciliation. Hence the Lord’s Prayer must be prayed by a church whose members have forgiven one another.” Thus the warning goes beyond mere individual judgment to judgment of the entire community. While forgiveness and mercy are not identical, they overlap strongly in these verses; divine forgiveness of offences in a potentially eschatological context matches human forgiveness of others within this world. The communal outworking of forgiveness is essential to this return to the ethics of creation, the fulfillment of the higher righteousness and the love of others already commanded. Thus it appears that the ultimate appropriation of God’s promise for mercy in judgment depends on individuals having enacted mercy and forgiveness to one another in life (echoing 5:7).

Following in a similar vein to 6:12-15, in Matthew 7:1-2 Jesus teaches an equivalence between divine and human judgment. Jesus warns that our responses one to another, in forgiveness or condemnation, will be the measure we will receive at the final judgment. Matthew uses remarkable grammatical ingenuity in his warnings: ὃ κρίματι κρίνετε κριθήσεται and ὃ μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε μετρηθήσεται, making the future judgment correspond with one’s current actions. Hagner notes that the phrase, “lest you be judged” “does not imply that one can avoid judgment by God at the eschatological judgment (this

---

380 Davies and Allison, Matthew I, 617. Given James’ emphasis on the community and that issues like justice and mercy are most relevant in corporate relations (cf. Jas 2:1-6), their point regarding the communal nature of forgiveness may well be appropriate in James as well.

381 Marianne Sawicki, “Person or Practice? Judging in James and in Paul,” in The Missions of James, Peter, and Paul: Tensions in Early Christianity, ed. Bruce Chilton and Craig Evans (Leiden: Brill, 2005), 401, observes that inculcating kingdom values is how the Father goes about being “our Father”: “The Father forgives the debts of those who have forgiven their debtors. For both Jesus and James, we might go a set further and say that this reciprocity is constitutive of the meaning of divine Fatherhood itself. The Father fathers or begets by imposing the law of the kingdom.”

382 Matthew 6:12-15 and 7:1-2 together appear to function as a midrash of Sirach 28:1-2, quoted above. The parallel in Lk. 6:37 combines these two segments from Matthew: “Do not judge, and you will not be judged (μὴ κρίνετε, καὶ οὐ μὴ κριθήτε). Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned (καταδικάζετε, καὶ οὐ μὴ καταδικασθήτε). Forgive, and you will be forgiven (ἀπολύσετε, καὶ ἀπολύθησεσθε).”

383 John S. Kloppenborg, “Agrarian Discourse and the Sayings of Jesus” (paper presented at Biblical Studies Seminar, University of St Andrews, February 20, 2008), 24, notes that the Matthean rendition of the measure-for-measure saying has been moved into the realm “of law and retribution” such that it has been “assimilated to the lex talionis.” He agreed that James follows Matthew’s apocalyptic leanings.
judgment is presupposed in the following words) but merely that the way in which one judges others will be the way one is judged by God at the eschatological judgment.  

While Matthew’s use of κρίνω here sounds threatening, presumably if a person chooses to view his neighbor in mercy, then there is no threat. Stanley comments, “Quite simply, at judgment time people will be treated in the same way they have treated others.” It is far better, then, not to judge one’s neighbor but deal with them in mercy and forgiveness.

d. First Warnings of Judgment: Matthew 7:15-28

In this passage, Jesus uses a farming metaphor to explain the role of people’s lifestyles for determining whether they are true or false teachers/prophets, but the metaphor swiftly moves to include judgment with the addition of εἰς πῦρ βάλλεται. The cost of bearing bad “fruit” by not having a lifestyle in keeping with Jesus’ teaching is judgment, being cut off and cast out. Jesus continues with the warning that calling Jesus “Lord”—and even doing miraculous deeds in his name—is not sufficient for entry into the kingdom. Here again Betz sees evidence of an anti-Pauline redactor at work, observing, “Who are the ones who cry out, ‘Lord, Lord,’ in the scene before the judgment seat of Jesus in Matt. 7:21-23, but are nevertheless cast out? They are the lawless Gentile Christians, with their kyrios-Christology, who have prophesied in the name of Jesus, have cast out demons and done many mighty works, but who have not done the will of the Father who is in heaven.” This, however, is a forced fit for the passage, and Stanton observes, “Pauline Christians might have been expected to appeal to πίστις or even

---

384 Hagner, Matthew 1-13, 169.
385 France, Matthew, 142, notes that “the least that such [a ‘fault-finding, condemnatory’] attitude can expect is to be judged with equal harshness by other men. But the passive, as often in Matthew, probably conceals God himself as the agent. Just as he will forgive those who forgive (6:14-15), he will condemn those who condemn.”
386 Stanley, Jesus and Salvation by Works, 331. He adds, “While these passages evidently teach that God’s final treatment of man is dependant upon man’s final treatment of his fellow man we should not forget that Jesus in fact taught that at judgment time a measure for measure type principle would be implemented. Whatever problems we have with this theologically it is clear that this is what the text teaches” (332).
387 Betz, Sermon on the Mount, 20.
(conceivably to γυνῶσις as the basis of their libertinism.) Instead of imagining a fight between Jewish and Gentile Christians, this passage is best understood in its context with other “fruit” passages in which responding to Jesus’ kingdom ethic of repentance and obedience is essential.

Likewise, though this passage is closely related to the one following which defines the expected obedience, here we must note what is not needed for entry to the kingdom: showy signs of power, even if done in Jesus’ name. These things are all said to have been done τῷ σῷ ὀνόματι, but apparently were not deeds done in obedience to God’s will. Jesus explicitly states that only those who ὁ ποιῶν τὸ θέλημα τοῦ πατρός (as taught in the Sermon) will enter the kingdom. Stanton says, “for the evangelist the words of Jesus are that important,” as becomes apparent in verses 24-28.

France notes one other startling revelation of this passage, at the point that Jesus states πολλοὶ ἔρχονται μοι ἐν ἑκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ. “Notice that in vv. 21-23 Jesus presents himself as the judge at ‘that day’, when his hearers would have expected God to be mentioned. The claim is all the more striking for being assumed, not argued. Moreover, the criterion of judgment is their relationship with him.” Those judged call Jesus “Lord,” and seem to think that he should recognize them, but judgment happens not based on whether they can work miracles by his name. Instead, Jesus speaks with full authority, warning that the future judgment is based on their obedience to the Father’s will as he has taught it.

Jesus concludes his sermon with the analogy of (dis)obedience to building on a sandy or solid foundation. The story compares the wise person who builds on rock to

---

389 Ibid., 190, noting, “For Matthew, the Q reference to ‘carrying out the words of Jesus’ can be paraphrased by ‘doing the will of my Father.’”
390 France, Matthew, 149.
those who obey Jesus’ words, and the foolish person to the one who builds on sand.\textsuperscript{391}

Much like the story of the seeds, the obedient person endures storms and hard times while the one who hears (ὢ ἀκούων) but does not put Jesus’ teaching into action (μὴ ποιῶν αὐτοῦ) falls flat when trials come. Here we see the correct link between hearing and doing: namely, hearing leads to doing. The failure to do what one has heard marks one as a fool headed for destruction.\textsuperscript{392} Davies and Allison remind us, “The rock is not hearing and doing but the teaching of Jesus as delineated in the great sermon; and to build on that rock, that is, to do the will of the Father in heaven, shows a person to be prudent.”\textsuperscript{393} They note that the storm in v. 25 is not just “the calamities and afflictions of everyday life,” but rather, “in the OT the storm often represents God’s judgment . . . and in later Jewish literature the difficulties and trials of the latter days are, despite Gen 9.11, sometimes pictured as terrible tempests.”\textsuperscript{394} It does not seem necessary that this story refer solely to the eschatological judgment, but following the judgment story in vv. 15-23, the eschaton very likely is this parable’s main context.

Hauerwas observes, “If we know ourselves and others by our fruits, we must have learned what constitutes good fruit. Jesus’s sermon provides the outline for the discernment of those who are true.”\textsuperscript{395} Here Jesus again refers to his teaching as a λόγος three times in a row, recalling the entirety of the Sermon on the Mount with all of its various imperatives, blessings, and illustrations. The λόγοι of Jesus are the firm rock upon

\textsuperscript{391} Betz, \textit{Sermon on the Mount}, 20-21, again creatively concludes, “can it be a coincidence that the wise disciple, whose life is represented in the parable of Matt. 7:24-27, builds his house ‘upon the rock.’ . . . Can this ‘rock’ be anything other than an allusion to Peter and his church, against which Paul may be polemicizing, in concealed form, in 1 Cor. 3.11?” Here the difficulty is that this parable serves to summarize Jesus teaching and the need for each person to apply it, not an ecclesiological statement regarding Peter as the base of the church in contrast to Paul.

\textsuperscript{392} Davies and Allison, \textit{Matthew I}, 720, highlight that “It is perhaps noteworthy that, in 7:24-27, Matthew says nothing at all about studying the words of Jesus. For the evangelist, presumably, it is not studying that is greater but doing. Compare m. ‘Abot 1.17, which no doubt addresses the tendency in rabbinic Judaism to exalt study at the expense of other action.”

\textsuperscript{393} Ibid., 721.

\textsuperscript{394} Ibid.

\textsuperscript{395} Hauerwas, \textit{Matthew}, 90.
which wise live, guiding their behavior in all aspects of life: relationships, speech, anger, prayer, fasting, tithing, even law obedience.  

While quite obviously the death and resurrection of Jesus are central to the Christian faith, Jesus declares that acceptance through the doing of his words is how a person survives the storm of judgment. In contrast, Davies and Allison note the fate of those who do not obey: “Their end is destruction (7.13) and separation from Jesus (7.23). This is the unsoothing end on which the sermon ends.”  

Much like the covenant end of Deuteronomy, obedience or disobedience to Jesus’ λόγοι work their respective results.  

Stanton adds, “In the SM and in the gospel as a whole, grace and demand are linked inextricably. For Matthew, the Jesus of the SM is the Son of God through whom God is acting for mankind: it is his demanding teaching which is to be central in the life of the community and in its discipling of the nations.”  

Jesus, by his λόγοι, gives a new ethic to the people of the Kingdom by which they will be recognized, a law that cannot be fulfilled by any legalistic obedience but that requires a transformation of the heart and disposition. So comprehensive was this new “law-giving,” people understandably “wondered” at this Sermon that redefines law and obedience itself. Hauerwas rightly notes, “Jesus teaches as one who has the authority to determine what is authoritative.”

---

396 Stanley, Jesus and Salvation by Works, 186-87, concludes, “Central to Matthew’s SM is the kind of righteousness required to enter the kingdom as stated in 5:20, itself analogous to doing the Father’s will in 7:21. Based on a couple of references taken from Hosea 6:6 it is evident that righteousness and the Father’s will are tantamount to showing love and mercy. While righteousness cannot simply be defined as love or mercy these are certainly qualities that separated the insufficient righteousness of the scribes and the Pharisees with the exceeding righteousness necessary to enter the kingdom. They are at the core.”

397 Davies and Allison, Matthew I, 723.

398 This sort of linguistic distinction of Jesus’ λόγοι as the rule of the Kingdom very well sets up James’ use of the λόγος as the kingdom νόμος.


400 Hauerwas, Matthew, 92. Banks, Jesus and the Law, 245, thus concludes, “The whole question of Law, therefore, must be placed in a wider context, for the central point in these encounters . . . was not the issue of law but the authority of Jesus himself.”
2. The Parable of the Unmerciful Servant: Matthew 18:21-35

The parable of the unmerciful servant provides us with crucial information for understanding the intersection of judgment and mercy.\(^{401}\) Introduced by Peter’s query about how often he must forgive a fellow disciple, Hagner notes that this parable helps to establish the priority of God’s gracious forgiveness to his people as well as their subsequent responsibility to act in kind.\(^{402}\) Regardless of the fact that initial forgiveness comes by an act of God, it is clear that final forgiveness depends on the individual’s willingness to forgive. The parable depicts the king’s pardon of a poor servant’s great debt, one he never could have repaid. When that servant was freed, however, he refused to extend clemency to a fellow servant with a far lesser debt. Hearing of this action, the king’s response is definite and furious, reminding the first servant that the king had forgiven him (πάσαν τὴν ὀφειλὴν ἐκείνην ἀφῆκα σοι), and so he ought to have shown the same mercy (σὺκ ἔδει καὶ σὲ ἔλεησαι τὸν σύνδουλὸν σου, ως κάγω σὲ ἡλέησα). The servant is responsible to show mercy because he has already having been forgiven his debt (see especially v. 33). When he failed to appropriate the mercy given him by extending it to his fellow servant, however, his own forgiveness was revoked.\(^{403}\)

In this passage, Jesus makes a linguistic jump from the master “forgiving” the one servant (ἀφῆκα σοι) to the responsibility of that servant to “show mercy” to his fellow servant (ἔλεησαι τὸν σύνδουλὸν σου) on the basis of having received mercy (ὅε ἡλέησα). Luomanen finds this pattern crucial to understanding salvation in Matthew, for:

\(^{401}\) Interestingly, this passage is not highlighted by Deppe as a saying of Jesus taken over by James. Given its frequency of citation by commentators of James regarding 2:12-13, however, this is considered one of the most important passages for understanding James’ theology of judgment.


\(^{403}\) Bauckham, “James and Jesus,” 129, regarding the relevance of this passage to James 2:13, notes “That God’s mercy will be shown in showing mercy to those who themselves have shown mercy to others (2:13), a principle already found in Jewish wisdom tradition (Sir. 28:1-4; Prov. 17:5 LXX), is especially characteristic of Jesus’ teaching (Matt. 5:7; 6:12, 14-15; 18:23-35; Mark 11:25). Put otherwise, from the abundant mercy of God flows the abundant mercy shown by his people (3:17), especially to the needy (1:27; 2:15-16), and from the generous giving of God comes the generous giving of God’s people to those in need (2:15-16).” As this parable shows, mercy is initiated by the divine figure, but it is *in response to and because of* this that mercy is demanded from all who would claim to be among God’s people.
it is clear that the indicative forms the basis of Matthew’s understanding of salvation. The starting point is God’s election, which calls for human response. Although the indicative does not hold a prominent position in Mt quantitatively, its role in Matthew’s pattern of salvation is crucial. It can be seen in Matthew’s understanding of salvation history, where God’s election forms the starting point, as well as in the fact that those who enter the group of Jesus’ followers experience salvation as a present reality which they are to maintain through obedience.404

Jesus here fleshes out his positive lex talionis: the implication is that the people in his audience had received God’s mercy and were therefore responsible for showing mercy to each other (this positive lex ties this parable to the teaching of 6:12-13 and 7:1-2).405

Ultimately, to receive forgiveness and mercy at the final judgment requires the obedient response of forgiveness one to another now, a response to the far greater forgiveness each person has already received. The parable presents three stages: (a) initial mercy (forgiveness of the debt) was given at the whim of the king for an unimaginable debt; (b) mercilessness was then enacted by the forgiven servant in face of a much smaller debt; and (c) finally justice is enacted as a response to (b). Jesus warns that this parable applies to each person, saying, ὡστός καὶ ὁ σεβάσματι μου ὁ οὐράνιος ποιήσει ὑμῖν, ἐὰν μὴ ἀφίητε. In slight disagreement with Shank, who argues, “Jesus here teaches that the forgiveness of God . . . remains conditional, according to the individual’s subsequent response to the gracious forgiveness which he has received,”406 the initial mercy was not itself conditional. Forgiveness was freely given, but justice called for merciless judgment after mercy failed to bear fruit. As van Aarde states, “To receive forgiveness and to refuse

404 Luomanen, Entering the Kingdom, 285.
405 Reiser, Jesus and Judgment, 279, warns, “this parable does not say the same thing as Sir. 28:2. . . . It is true that the Matthean application in v. 35 appears to understand the parable in this sense; but in the parable itself the servant is not judged simply because he refused mercy; it is because he refused it after he himself had received it in lavish measure.” He continues, “the idea that God’s attitude toward human beings corresponds to the attitude of human beings toward their fellow men and women plays an important part. But we should not explain the parable on the basis of the logion; instead, the logion should be interpreted on the basis of the parable. The parable expresses the unspoken premise of the logion: Because we ourselves have received God’s grace, we can and should give up judging; we should forgive and be generous. Otherwise, we have received grace in vain” (280-81).
to forgive others means excluding oneself from the reign of God.”

For those who fail to bear the fruit of mercy already experienced, judgment is absolute.


Finally, in the last section of Jesus’ eschatological discourse, Jesus brings together the issue of works and judgment in what Hagner calls “an apocalyptic revelation discourse.” Here, in the dividing of the sheep and goats, we see the works that create the lines of distinction. “Sheep” traditionally referred to the people of Israel, so it seems reasonable that the division here occurs between the true Israel—the true people of God—and those who are only masquerading among them. As in the prior literature, the distinction is black and white with a bipartite division of “sheep” and “goats,” a symbolic way of saying “righteous” and “wicked” (see v. 37). The division between the two groups is based on their deeds: the righteous are welcomed into their “inheritance (κληρονομήσατε),” because they fed the hungry, clothed the poor, gave hospitality to the stranger, and visited the sick and imprisoned, while the wicked are condemned for their failure to act in this manner. Nolland observes, “Vv. 35-36 explain the basis of identification. . . . The items on the list are all concrete acts in response to specific and pressing needs. The list is clearly intended to be exemplary and not at all exhaustive. Comparable lists from the OT and Jewish tradition share many of the elements found in vv. 35-36, but without the same scope or degree of consistency of form.” He continues, “In Mt. 25:31-46 this list of acts of compassion appears no fewer than four times, with a significant abbreviation on only the fourth occasion. The account is concerned to drive

---

407 van Aarde, “ΙΗΣΟΥΣ,” 15-16, argues for a political and economic interpretation of this parable.
408 Donald A. Hagner, Matthew 14-28 (Dallas: Word Books, 1995), 740, notes that although the immediately preceding context might lead one to think of this as a parable, “this narrative is based not on a fictitious story but on the description of a very real, though future, event.”
409 See even as early as 2 Sam 24:17/1 Chr 21:17; 1 Kings 22:17/2 Chr 18:16; Psa 74:1; 78:52; 79:13; 100:3; Jer 23:1; 50:6; Ezek 34:6, 11-12, 15, 17, 20-22, 31; Mic 2:12; Zech. 10:2; Matt 9:36; 10:6; 15:24.
410 Nolland, Matthew, 1028.
home the profound significance of the kinds of behavior listed. The behavior listed concerns active work on behalf of those who have neither advocates nor resources.

The righteous are declared “blessed” because they saw the needs of the helpless and acted on their behalf, identifying with them in all their different forms of need: hunger, thirst, stranger, ill, or imprisoned, all of which Jesus claims as having been done to himself. The “sheep” are perplexed at when they did these things to the king, not realizing that service to the “least ones” equals service to Jesus. Stanley concludes, since “Jesus identifies with others . . . how one treats another person is a direct reflection of one’s attitude toward Jesus.”

The unconscious nature of their response, however, is crucial to understanding the nature of God’s law in Matthew: there is no conscious “staying in” through a new legal code. Instead, the very nature of their obedience to God’s way reveals the absolute transformation of their character to the imitatio dei. They have simply “done what God would have us to do and so doing have ministered to Christ himself.”

On the basis of their response to the helpless and needy, the decision is made, and the “goats” “go away for eternal punishment (εἰς κόλασιν αἰώνιον), the righteous to eternal life (εἰς ζωήν αἰώνιον).” The reward of “life” is promised to those who unselfconsciously practice acts of mercy, while judgment falls on those do not live according to the principles of Leviticus 19:18 and Hosea 6:6. This passage depicts the final judgment as depending on one’s deeds, particularly of mercy. Beare, holding a traditional view of salvation strictly by grace, is troubled by this parable and concludes, “There is no trace of saving faith—the righteous have done their good deeds without any thought that they were serving Christ (or God). There is no mercy shown to the accursed, while the

---

411 Ibid., 1031. Regarding the object of the charity, Nolland, Matthew, 1032, argues that “There will be an important difference in v. 45, which will make it clear that while the focus here is on disciples who have helped other disciples in need, the Son of Man actually identifies (but not as with a brother or sister) with the needy in their need” and “the omission is also important in another respect: it implies that ‘the king’ values service to the needy as service to himself irrespective of whether those served are disciples or not. It may not be service to his brother or sister, but it does count as service to himself” (1034).

412 Stanley, Jesus and Salvation by Works, 336. He notes also that “righteousness is being viewed as a pattern of life” in the Synoptics.

413 Hauerwas, Matthew, 211.
blessed have no need of mercy. There is justice for all, but is justice without mercy
Christian?" And indeed, in Neufeld’s summary: “The king’s verdict depends only on
whether or not the nations have acted compassionately toward the least, the hungry, the
thirsty, strangers, the naked, the sick, and the imprisoned. This summarizes the standard of
righteousness that Jesus taught throughout Matthew.” The problem Beare has with this
passage originates from his preconception that eternal life is strictly a gift of God upon
which works can have no bearing, while Jesus’ teaching repeatedly has emphasized that
God’s final judgment is based on a person’s life, whether one has lived by the ethics of the
Kingdom. By failing to understand mercy as a covenantal requirement, Beare concludes
that “the blessed have no need of mercy,” while in truth the blessed are the ones who do
receive God’s mercy as the rightful conclusion of justice. Mendez observes that “the Bible
points out the impossibility of expressing God’s love without the consideration of
concrete activity on behalf of fellow human beings. . . . God is love and God is justice, and
we cannot say that both categories are abstract unhistorical entities whose value lies
precisely in their transcendent nature.”

These acts are holistic and often uncomfortable, but there is also an echo of the
covenantal revelation of Deuteronomy 10:12-22, wherein YHWH commands his people
to care for the poor and welcome the alien, remembering their own history with humility.
In a culture that desperately wanted the Romans and the foreigners out of their land, one
of the items that Jesus praises is welcoming (συνάγω) the stranger (ξένος), bringing
foreigners into fellowship so that they are no longer outsiders. Each act demands sacrifice

---

414 Francis Wright Beare, The Gospel According to Matthew: A Commentary (Oxford: Basil Blackwell, 1981), 496-97. He begins: “It is to be noted that in this whole passage there is no trace of a doctrine of the forgiveness of sins, or of the grace of God. The righteous are invited to enter into the Kingdom because they have shown themselves worthy by their kind deeds, not because their sins are forgiven.” Hagner, Matthew 14-28, 746-47, however, argues “although sometimes understood as confirming a salvation by works, this passage need not be understood as incompatible with the gospel of the kingdom as a divine gift. . . . Matthew does stress the importance of righteousness as good deeds, but as a part of a larger context in which God acts graciously for the salvation of his people.”


416 Mendez, “Justification,” 186. His points to the examples of “Ja. 2:14ff.; 1 Jn. 3:10ff.”
and discomfort on the part of the practitioner, going far beyond the minimum of tithing set by the law and moving into actions in accordance to God’s nature. Nolland reminds that this teaching alone ought not overset the rest of the Gospel’s teaching that “God’s fresh initiative is located in Jesus,” but concludes, “Recognizing what God is doing and aligning oneself with it are of fundamental significance for Matthew.” Much as with the conclusion of the Sermon on the Mount, merely calling Jesus “Lord” without putting into practice his transformational ethic is useless at the judgment. Religion cannot consist in carefully regulated laws but rather is the active outworking of God’s Kingdom on earth, an ethic James will further define.

Richard Hays concludes that one of the key themes of Matthew’s theology is the importance Jesus placed upon how his followers live. “God’s ultimate judgment of all will be based upon concrete works of love and mercy, in accordance with the teachings of Jesus. Confessional orthodoxy counts for nothing unless it is accompanied by obedience to the will of God. The kingdom of God is characterized by compassionate outreach to the weak and needy.” Hays reads Matthew through the “hermeneutical filter” of the double love

---

417 While this development became apparent after the time period we are concerned with here, Luz, *Matthew 21-28*, 278, observes that “Later rabbinic theory distinguished between these good deeds, which they called ‘acts of charity’ (מְסֻיָּה, מְסֻיָּא תְּפִילָה יִשְׁרַיִם), and alms (לְהַקְדֵּשׁ). ‘Acts of charity’ included deeds that not only required money but also involved the whole person. Together they belong to the ‘good works’ (מְסֻיָּה, מְסֻיָּא תְּפִילָה יִשְׁרַיִם) that, unlike the commandments, could not be defined more precisely by the Torah. Works of charity were very important for the Jews, especially after the destruction of the temple. According to Jewish texts, performing or failing to perform acts of charity can be decisive at the judgment.” Luomanen, *Entering the Kingdom*, 186, notes, “In rabbinic tradition, there are also traces of the belief that the treatment of the needy is compared to one’s actions toward God.” For Deuteronomy 10:12-22 as background for ethical instruction concerning care of the poor and the alien, see also Mariam J. Kamell, “The Economics of Humility: The Rich and the Humble in James,” in *Economic Dimensions of Early Christianity*, ed. Bruce W. Longenecker and Kelly Lehngood (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 2009), 159-64.

418 Nolland, *Matthew*, 1036-37. He warns “At every level of the tradition the account in Mt. 25:31-46 is denatured if its criterion of judgment is allowed to displace others that feature prominently in the Gospel material. To be sure, Matthew places a fresh level of emphasis on the need to conform action to profession and to a significant degree conceives following Jesus ethically (see, e.g., 16:24-27), as long as ‘ethically’ is understood to relate to action and is seen to embrace love of God as well as love of neighbour (22:34-40) and as long as action is understood to be rooted in the nature of the inner person (12:34-35).” While Matthew readily “assigns functions of deity to Jesus” and views him as the focus of God’s work in the world now and in the future, in this passage he also rhetorically emphasizes the importance of these works in the judgment day.

command—love of God and of neighbor—which leads him to this conclusion. He understands Jesus’ teaching to require fulfillment of the law in order to pass the final judgment, but the law to be enacted by God’s people is the deeper righteousness promulgated by Jesus most clearly in the Sermon, but also throughout his life and teaching. Mendez notes that “Justice is closely linked to eschatology in several ways. The pervasive presence of God’s justice in the eschaton is the reality behind all present mirror-like human justice.” This is a crucial summary of Matthew’s theology, for the Gospel consistently warns readers that their actions, especially those of love and mercy, are mandatory for them to attain God’s mercy in final outworking of justice. To take these warnings at less than face value is to miss one of Matthew’s key points.

**Preliminary Conclusions**

From this survey, a few conclusions ought to be highlighted. First, throughout the text, a consistent emphasis is placed on deeds of mercy and forgiveness, particularly in the three pericopes studied in greater depth. A legalistic quota of obedience is consistently rejected (cf. Peter’s question in Matt. 18:21-22); rather the text drives the reader toward developing a merciful disposition. Matthew focuses on the character of a disciple, revealing the shape of kingdom character as revealed through the λόγοι, the νόμοι of Jesus. The call and empowerment for this character of imitatio dei begins with God’s mercy, revealed both in Israel’s past but come to fruition in Jesus’ presence. Luomanen thus concludes:

---

420 Ibid., 101.
421 C. Stettler, “Paul, the Law and Judgment by Works,” *EiQ* 76 (2004), 195-96, sees this also in Paul, arguing that “For Paul, the last judgment is a judgment by works (Rom. 2:9-10). This is true also for believers (2 Cor. 5:10). . . . Paul repeatedly warns those who remain in sin that by doing so they will lose their salvation (e.g., 1 Cor. 10:1-12). . . . Judgment by works means for them that their obedience is measured, not their disobedience.”
422 Mendez, “Justification,” 194.
423 Bornkamm, “End-Expectation,” 23-24, observes, all “are judged by the ‘one’ standard, namely that of the love they have shown towards, or withheld from, the humblest. That decides who belong to the righteous, who enter into eternal life, and who have to go into eternal punishment. . . . the final destiny is determined by the doing of God’s will.”
Matthew’s view of salvation can be fully understood only in a Jewish-Christian context where God’s past deeds in the history of his people were still known well enough. . . . In Matthew’s view, only through Jesus is it possible to restore the relationship between God and his people which Israel had broken. In Matthew’s pattern of salvation, the main function of Jesus is to make possible a life in obedience to God.\footnote{Luomanen, \textit{Entering the Kingdom}, 285.}

The audience has repeatedly witnessed God’s character through his deeds—both in mercy and judgment—but God’s mercy comes to its fulfillment in Jesus. Because of the greatness of God’s mercy in the Christ-event, those who claim faith in Christ now must follow the way of unquantifiable obedience and mercy as they seek the coming of the Kingdom.
CHAPTER 3: THE THEOLOGY IS PRESENTED IN JAMES 1-2

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

There are several questions raised as we approach James. Does he follow the growing wisdom trajectory of judgment and mercy as the two sides of mercy? How do Jesus’ descriptions of judgment and the righteous affect James’ writing? Even more basically, does James show influence from Jesus’ teaching in these areas or is his writing strictly in line with the earlier wisdom texts? Finally, how do these discussions help us to understand James’ theology of salvation?

These questions all reach the bulk of their answers in chapters one and two of James. Therefore this chapter walks closely through those two chapters, attempting to classify the elusive identity of the word/law to which obedience is commanded, the nature of “faith” and its “works,” and his nuanced relationship between judgment and mercy. Because his arguments overlap, repeat and build on each other, for the sake of clarity we will follow the order of the text, drawing out the themes as they appear. In the next chapter we will survey the end of the epistle more synthetically to determine how the categories studied here sustain through the text and ultimately develop the soteriology of the epistle.

A. JAMES 1

1. The Nature of God and the Wisdom of Trials: James 1:1-8

This introductory section presents the reader with both an encapsulated glance into both the author’s theology of God as well as an introduction to the Christian life. The two themes interplay throughout these verses, so for this section we follow the text’s structure as it illumines these particular themes.
The greeting sets the tone for the epistle’s theology. Beginning by describing himself as a δοῦλος, a slave θεοῦ καὶ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, James reveals a high Christology. While some argue this mention of Jesus could be a later addition, McCartney avers, “No matter how this verse is read, James is setting forth a very high Christology, identifying Jesus not just as Christ (Messiah) but also as Lord, mentioned in the same breath with God.” Bauckham adds that James’ wisdom may have had “special authority because it is the wisdom of a sage whose own teacher was Jesus,” a reality presupposed in the introduction of 1:1. James’ prescript serves to pave the way for a Christological reading in the text, even while serving as a call to proper humility, since the author of the text claims only lowly status for himself.

Turning then to the human concern of the passage, verses 2-4 introduce us to the goal of the epistle: the “completion” and the maturity of the audience. He begins with the correct response to trials—πᾶσαν χαρὰν ἡγήσασθε—recognition of God’s purpose to use all circumstances to draw his people into maturity. Intriguingly, it is not the trials that are said to have an ἐργὸν τέλειον; rather, ὑπομονή is the key in shaping godly maturity. The end result of endurance is maturity in faith. Like Jesus’ command in

---

425 Lockett, *Purity and Worldview*, 171, observes that “in the LXX, δοῦλος was regularly used to render the Hebrew term דֶּבֶנ which often referred to those who obey God, and specifically of figures such as Moses, Joshua, David and the prophets.”
426 See Allison, “Fiction of James,” 529-70, particularly pp. 541-43, for its summary of this argument.
427 Dan McCartney, *James* (Grand Rapids: Baker Academic, 2009), 78. This, in contrast to Dunn, *Unity*, 251, who argues that “The letter of James is the most Jewish, the most undistinctively Christian document in the NT. . . . The Jewish and undistinctively Christian character of the letter is such that some have been able to argue, not implausibly, that James was originally a Jewish document taken over with little alteration by an early church. However, there are a number of features which seem to require a Christian author. . . . The faith he gives expression to is one which seeks to live according to the teachings of Jesus within a wholly Jewish framework of belief and practice — Christian at significant points but more characteristically Jewish in sum.”
429 Michael Thompson, in conversation at Tyndale Fellowship, 4 July 2009, argued James 1:4 was the thesis of the epistle for this reason.
431 See also Sir. 2:1-6, particularly 2:4 which warns them to “be patient” or endure (μακροθυμεῖν) in times of trial and humiliation (ταπεινωμένους).
Matthew 5:48, ἐσεσθε . . . τέλειοι, the goal here is that the hearers ἦτε τέλειοι. James, as did earlier wisdom authors, recognizes that endurance—consistency in right actions despite difficulty—is crucial for becoming τέλειος. James 1:5 then gives us a crucial insight into the author’s understanding of God. He calls God τοῦ διδόντος θεοῦ, placing the descriptive participle into the very title of God and making it absolutely clear that this generosity is a primary and repeated trait of God. Rather than qualifying an elite group as the recipients of this generosity, James specifies that God gives to everyone (πᾶσιν) generously. The term ἀπλῶς, here translated as “generously” could also mean “single-mindedly," an idea which makes sense in contrast with the “double-minded” person about to appear in 1:7, a person presented as the antithesis of all that God is and wants. In this regard God’s character might be called “simple”: he gives generously and without reservation, doubt, or hesitation.

Depending on how one translates this term, then, it can support the image of God’s purity of will as well as his liberality. James then adds that God gives “without reproach.” Along with expanding on the picture of God’s sheer munificence, this phrase unlocks the idea that God does not expect his people to have wisdom except as a gift from him. Batten observes that “such a description fits well with the image of a frank friend and benefactor,” in contrast with the practice of patronage. God does not condemn the

432 Deppe, Sayings of Jesus, 65-67, does not find a purposeful quotation of Jesus in this verse, noting instead “that moral completeness was the goal of many, if not all, of the early church leaders” (65).
433 We will look more closely at the τέλ- word group later, but it is worth noting Lockett, Purity and Worldview, 104: “perfection for James is to display total and unvarying commitment to God and to do good works and develop the character prescribed by the ‘law of liberty’ and the wisdom from above.”
434 The present tense nature of the participle allows the possibility of repeated or continual giving as God’s nature.
435 As Johnson, James, 178.
436 As Moo, James, 59.
437 ἀπλῶς could also mean “sincerely, without hesitation.” Cf. Davids, James, 72-73.
438 As Ralph P. Martin, James (Waco: Word, 1988), 18. Matthew 6:22-23 might support this contrast with its division of the eye as ἀπλῶς or πονηρός. This is the only use of the ἀπλῶς root in Matthew and supports the growing idea in James that God’s people are also called to be ἀπλῶς.
439 Alicia Batten, “God in the Letter of James: Patron or Benefactor?,” NTS 50 (2004), 265. In contrast, she describes patronage as “by definition an exchange between unequal parties, and maintained by a system whereby the clients were kept obedient to, and were often exploited by, their providers” (264). The description of God in 1:5 stands in stark contrast to an exploitative system.
petitioner for their lack of wisdom but gives the very thing needed to become mature and complete (1:4).

The warning to the doubter that follows in 1:6-8 makes clear how important this aspect of God’s character is. To hesitate shows either doubt in his character as generous or vacillation regarding the value of wisdom, and neither pleases God.\textsuperscript{440} The διακρινόμενος stands in direct opposition to God’s nature as ἀπλῶς, failing to recognize the simplicity of generosity in God’s nature. While God seeks to give to his people everything that they need to please him, those who doubt, like those who are friends with the world (4:4), reveal their uncertainty regarding whether they want to please God, and thus cut themselves off from the help he willingly gives.

For James, the adjective ἀκατάστατος (also 3:8; related noun ἀκαταστασία in 3:16) is unequivocally bad. Here the adjective qualifies the ἀνήρ διψυχος, the double-souled person, while in 3:8 it characterizes the active tension of the evil embodied in the tongue. This instability of path (δωδεκάς) reminds the reader of other “two ways” teaching visible in Psalm 1 and prevalent in both secular and Jewish teaching.\textsuperscript{441} Instead of choosing one path and remaining faithfully on it, this ἀνήρ διψυχος wavers between them in all his different choices, revealing his lack of commitment to the right path. The term διψυχος, of course, is difficult to pin down precisely, as it appears first here and there is speculation whether James himself coined the term.\textsuperscript{442} Its intent, however, is clear. James does not say that the doubter literally has two souls—one of faith, the other of doubt. Rather, the doubter is torn internally by their own indecision, led by the wisdom of the world and

\textsuperscript{440} Cf. Marcin, James, 18, who notes “God’s nature . . . is not to be questioned, and his giving is marked by a spirit of spontaneity and graciousness. The theme of James is that of the ‘prodigality of God’ (Vouga).”

\textsuperscript{441} Pictured in Proverbs as the choice between two women, see also Didache 1:1: “There are two paths (δῶδε δύο τείοι), one of life and one of death, and the difference between these two paths is great” (in Bart D. Ehrman, The Apostolic Fathers, Vol. 1 [Cambridge, Mass: Harvard University Press, 2003], 417).

\textsuperscript{442} See Stanley E. Porter, “Is dipsuchos [James 1,8; 4,8] a ‘Christian’ Word?,” \textit{Biblica} 71 (1990) 469-98, who argues that it is essentially a “Christian” word because it appears in Christian literature alone through the first two centuries C.E. The concept, however, is not new, as Sirach 1:28b warns its readers not to approach God “with a divided mind” (καρδία δισοφόροι), in a similar context of prayer and proper fear of the Lord. Sirach 1:28-30 shares a variety of warnings with James: in addition to the divided mind, it also warns against hypocrisy (ὑποκριθης) and a self-deceived heart (ἡ καρδία σου πλήρης δόλου).
unable to trust God’s generous nature. Again, this person stands against the \( \alpha \pi \lambda \omega \varsigma \) nature of God, a contradiction to the goal of being \( \tau \epsilon \lambda \epsilon \iota \sigma \varsigma \) and \( \omicron \lambda \omicron \kappa \lambda \mu \rho \omicron \sigma \). By his doubt, he chooses to stand outside of relationship with God.

The introduction, therefore, presents the reader with a clear glimpse into James’ theology and purpose. God’s nature as good and generous is set in apposition to the human reality of difficult trials. The doubleness of human nature, meanwhile, stands in opposition to the unity and single-minded nature of God’s intent. Ultimately, this passage reminds the reader that, while called to endure, this endurance is made possible by the gift of God’s wisdom.

2. James 1:9-11: Humility versus Humiliation

This section introduces James’ contrast of the terms \( \delta \tau \alpha \iota \pi \epsilon \iota \nu \omicron \omicron \varsigma \) and \( \sigma \pi \lambda \omicron \upsilon \sigma \iota \omicron \varsigma \). Picking up on prophetic imagery from Isaiah 40 or Psalm 103, James compares the fates of those who rely on their wealth as similar to that of grass that disappears in a moment’s dry wind. The debate on this passage circles around the issue of whether the \( \pi \lambda \omicron \upsilon \sigma \iota \omicron \varsigma \) are also \( \omicron \delta \epsilon \lambda \phi \omicron \varsigma \), and subsequently whether the warning of coming humiliation is simply a warning or something more damning. Theologically, these verses correspond well with the multitude of passages throughout wisdom literature encouraging the oppressed person that God will bring about justice on their oppressors, whether early statements like Proverbs 18:12, which also contrasts the \( \upsilon \psi \omicron \omicron \omicron \tau \alpha \iota \) with the \( \tau \alpha \pi \epsilon \iota \nu \omicron \omicron \upsilon \omicron \omicron \upsilon \tau \alpha \iota \), or Sirach 11 and the pragmatic reminder of Pseudo-Phocylides 109, but also the more apocalyptic wisdom of 4Q418 126.ii.6-8 or *Enoch* 99:1. In all we see the consistent pattern that those who boast now will not boast in the time of God’s judgment.

---

\(^{443}\) Lockett, *Purity and Worldview*, 143, observes that the contrast in the text is “between \( \tau \epsilon \lambda \epsilon \iota \sigma \varsigma \) and \( \delta \iota \phi \omicron \chi \omicron \varsigma \),” so that “purity is a necessary, yet not sufficient, condition in order to achieve perfection.”

This passage, however, gives the first indication of James’ belief that every person is either one of ὁ ταπεινὸς or will be forcibly humiliated (ταπεινωθοῖς), a contrast that will be further developed through the book. While ὁ ταπεινὸς does contain the idea of physical poverty, it also conveys the Hebraic idea of the “righteous poor,” and thus is a more theological term than πτωχὸς and appropriate for the contrast presented in this passage. This idea may also pick up on the more nuanced beatitude in Matthew 5:2, the πτωχοὶ τῶν πνευματικῶν, who are promised ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν. This promise, of course, pairs with James’ reiteration in 2:5, as we will see shortly. Ultimately this passage introduces what will be important particularly in chapters 4 and 5 regarding a person’s salvation: the necessity of a humble heart before God without dependence upon worldly goods or status.


This section is not normally grouped together, but doing so reveals a thread not unlike two-ways teachings. One result is a greater awareness of the passage’s contrast of living by desires and living by obedience to the word. Another is a much fuller explanation of God’s role toward his people. Finally, combining these verses brings a third benefit of discussing the first two uses of λόγος together. As with 1:1-8, human and divine actions trade priority in the text.

First, the beatitude of 1:12 shows God’s merciful response to those who have endured πειρασμόν, here hinging between the “trials” of vv. 2-5 and the “temptations” of 13-15. The important action is ὑπομένει, for the blessing devolves upon those who endure their trials, engaging the process called for in vv. 2-4 leading toward maturity and godly character. Verse 12 promises that the one who endures λήμψεται τὸν στέφανον τῆς ζωῆς. Neusner views the πειρασμόν as temporal judgment: “What about this

446 Davids, Epistle of James, 43.
matter of ‘standing the test,’ which I identify with ‘standing in judgment’? The context does not suggest that the author of the Letter has in mind a transaction beyond the grave. For ‘standing the test . . . receiving the crown . . . ’ is followed by an account of self-exculpation for sin . . . That turning suggests we deal with judgment in this life, at death, not after resurrection.”

Most commentators, however, view this in terms of the eschatological gift of eternal life as the reward for enduring through the trials in life. This sets a soteriology as resting on two things from the human side: endurance and loving God.

In the progression of temptation in 1:13-15, we see the opposite of endurance. Instead of holding fast, these people fall prey to the lure of their own desires, and, having given in, begin a life cycle that leads to death. One may question whether the θάνατος that sin births is physical death such as disease brought on by sin, or spiritual death and actual damnation. The context of allegorized sin and desire and the contrast with the crown of life leads toward the latter conclusion. Thus we have another aspect of ὑπομένει: the conscious decision not to give into desires, enduring through both hardships and temptations.

James immediately warns, however, that his audience not be deceived: while they should not imagine that their desires are harmless, equally salvation is not merely through their own endurance. Verses 16-18 introduce a new but key point of James’ theology: the role of election in God’s mercy. Having clearly specified God’s generous nature in 1:5-8 and given a corresponding warning to those who doubt God’s unstinting generosity, the warning against deception in 1:16 stands out, followed with yet another expression of

---

448 Cf. Martin, James, 33; Mayor, St. James, 46, who comments that ζωής is a genitive of definition: “the crown which consists in life eternal”; or Davids, James, 80, who states, “the actual reward is salvation itself, for (eternal) life is certainly the content of the crown (so Laws, Massner, Mitton, Schnrage).” Cf. Prov. 10:6 for a similar phrasing, “blessings are upon the head of the righteous.”
449 Konradt, Christliche Existenz, 58, cautions that “daß θάνατος auch hier nicht erst die eschatologische Verdammnis der Sünder meint,” even while it may be a secondary implication of the person’s choices.
450 See John Milton’s Paradise Lost (2.629-1055) for a literary depiction of this incestuous relationship, which, however, allegorizes it away from the human responsibility James intends.
God’s munificence. As with the warning against doubt in 1:6, verse 16 implies a soteriological significance of self-deception. Failure to understand God’s nature as it is revealed in verses 17 and 18 by believing evil of him (as in vv. 13-15) can lead to a complete failure to receive his gifts, of which salvation is paramount.

James 1:17-18 may be the most triumphant statement in James of God’s role in redeeming his people. The author uses a redundant statement to emphasize God’s generosity, in contrast to the desire, sin, and death that bog down the previous verses. James does not want his audience confused. God is the source of manifold good underscored by his reiteration of πᾶς: πᾶσα δῶσις ἀγαθὴ καὶ πᾶν δώρημα τελεῖον. James manages both to highlight the completeness of God’s giving with the double use of πᾶς and to highlight the gift nature by the synonyms δῶσις and δώρημα. This is not the same as the outcome of endurance in 1:12 (the “crown of life”) but the sum total of every good aspect of life that cannot be earned, such as wisdom (1:5) and redemption (1:18). The readers are assured that he will not change in regards to this because “in him there is no variation or shadow of turning.” Unlike the planets that turn and shade and change, God is constant. As Garland describes it, “God’s goodness . . . is not as periodic as the full moon or the morning sunrise. It does not fade into the west.” With the bold statement of 1:17 James affirms God’s unchanging nature as the generous giver of all good as well as the singleness and purity of God’s nature as revealed by his desire to give his people what they need.

451 I have discussed this in greater depth elsewhere, see Mariam J. Kamell, “The Witness of James and the Implications of Grace” (paper presented at Tyndale Fellowship, Cambridge, 4 July 2009).
452 See Donald J. Verseput, “James 1:17 and the Jewish Morning Prayers,” NovT 39 (1997), 177-91, for a very plausible background for this description of God as the “Father of lights” within Jewish prayers said each morning to thank God for his faithfulness in bringing the new day and his mercy evidenced thereby.
453 Martin, James, 39, notes that this description stands in contrast to the shifting planets, for “while they are always in motion he never changes whether in himself . . . or in his dealings with his people (so 1:5).”
455 This unchangingness of God’s nature provides one more contrast to the ἄκαταστατοσ of the doubleminded in 1:8.
James uses that confidence to make very clear that God did the choosing for this new creation, election being the clearest example of God’s good gifts.⁴⁵⁶ James 1:18 states most boldly James’ theology of God’s initiatory work in electing and redeeming his people.⁴⁵⁷ As with Abraham and the people of Israel, the process of becoming part of the people of God is initiated and brought into being by God himself. This verse does not state only that God was willing, as if he merely acquiesced to such an event, but that God willed the new creation into being. James brings the causal participle δυναμεῖσι to the beginning of the sentence for this emphasis,⁴⁵⁸ as if to say that God’s willingness is the only reason James’ addressees had for their communion with God.⁴⁵⁹ Subsequently, the idea that he “gave birth” to these people indicates a new nature: they are no longer trapped by their fallen natures but have been re-created by the word and brought into the new covenant.⁴⁶⁰ This birth stands in direct contrast to the “birth” of death in 1:15. His audience, James says, are instead the “firstfruits” of God’s work, brought into creation by the active word of God. Between the language of God as the father of lights and the

---

⁴⁵⁶ The initial participle may be more simply translated as “being willing,” but it makes sense also as a causal participle since the rebirth would not have occurred without his active will of it. Contra Dibelius’ affirmation of James’ a-theological nature, Johnson, James, 204, remarks: “James’ declaration in 1:17 is rightly perceived as one of the noblest theologoumena in the NT. Patristic writers recognized its extraordinarily rich and foundational quality . . . [and it was] a favored text through the entire Eastern tradition.”

⁴⁵⁷ While the vast majority of scholars view this as a reference to redemption and new birth, L. E. Elliott-Binns, “James i.18: Creation or Redemption?,” NTJ 3 (1956), 148-61, views this as a reference “to the original creation of which man was the crown and the promise; [James] knows nothing of any ‘new’ creation or rebirth” (156). Others, such as Jackson-McCabe, Logos and Law, and Sophie Laws, A Commentary on the Epistle of James (London: A. & C. Black, 1980) agree, often pairing the creation interpretation with a background in Stoic philosophy of innate reason.

⁴⁵⁸ Timo Laato, “Justification according to James: A Comparison with Paul,” TJ 18 (1997), 48, observes, “The participle δυναμεῖσι expresses (with the same sense as with Philo) the free and sovereign will of the creator. It underscores the independence of salvation from human powers.” Konradt, Christliche Existenz, 58, notes: “In 1,18 selbst wird dies durch das vorangestellte, absolut gebrauchte Partizip δυναμεῖσι unterstrichen.” Likewise Johnson, James, 197, observes, “its [the verb boulomai] position at the beginning of the sentence with no transition . . . demands that it be given considerable weight.”

⁴⁵⁹ Compare with God’s recounting of his choice of Israel as well in Deuteronomy 10:14-15: despite being the Lord of the universe, he “set his heart in love on your ancestors alone and chose you.”

⁴⁶⁰ James’ use of “a kind/ sort of” (τινος) may well speak to the “already/not yet” nature of this new birth. The believers have been reborn, but they still apparently are struggling with obedience, something that Jeremiah 31:31-34 does not anticipate.
statement of God’s will, Konradt finds that “Für Jakobus’ soteriologische Konzeption ist damit ein weiterer wichtiger Baustein gewonnen.”

This understanding undergirds all of James’ concern for how his audience acts, for he wants them to behave in a manner in accordance with their birth. The language of firstfruits brings overtones of the Hebrew Bible sacrifice, the tithe due to God, as well as Pauline language in which Christ is the firstfruit of the resurrection and the new order. James now intimates that his audience is the firstfruit, the sacrificial reserve, the firstborn child owed to God (cf. Ex. 22:29), and as one dedicated to and birthed by God, love and obedience ought follow. As in the Hebrew Scriptures, election and service cannot be separated. Thus it appears that James has a somewhat circular path towards attaining mercy in the end: new birth then demands endurance and love which lead to eternal life, each step depending on the prior. Because God loved his people and chose to give them birth as a people, they ought to love him and endure the trials of life, and in enduring they witness to their love for God and “earn” mercy at the judgment and win their salvation as their crown.

Returning to the theme of obedience and endurance, verse 19 provides quintessential wisdom advice for these firstfruits concerning the proper control of their tongues and tempers. First is the simple contrast of “quick to listen, slow to speak” traditional to any wisdom instructor. When he reaches ὄργα, however, James adds further information: in contrast to the perfect work of endurance (1:4), human anger does not

461 Konradt, Christliche Existenz, 59.
462 Cf. Matt. 18:21-35. Alexander Rofé, Deuteronomy: Issues and Interpretation (London: T&T Clark, 2002), 13, describes the original election of Israel thus: “The ideal relationship that should exist between YHWH and Israel is a relationship of love. YHWH loved the Patriarchs (4.37; 10.15) or Israel (7.8) and for that reason elected the nation. The nation, for its part, must respond to him with complete love (7.5 10.12; 11.1, 13, 22), which means absolute loyalty to YHWH and acceptance of his service with all one’s heart.” Ray Carlton Jones, “Deuteronomy 10:12-22,” Int 46 (1992), 281, simplifies the discussion: “Election and service belong together in the Bible: The consequence of the Lord God’s sovereign election of Israel is that Israel must serve the Lord.”
463 R. W. Wall, Community of the Wise: The Letter of James (Valley Forge: Trinity Press International, 1997), 35-37, uses this verse as his guide to the structure of the epistle. For him these three commands are pivotal for understanding James’ message and the Christian life.

138
produce a τέλειος result. In giving free reign to one’s fury, one “works” (ἐργάζεται) something that stands in direct opposition to God’s ways. Whether one succumbs to temptation more readily when angry (1:13-15) or anger stems from or leads to judgmental attitudes (4:1-3, 11-12), those who claim kinship with God through their “birth” ought not give free reign to their anger. Thus 1:19 gives us three insights into how the people of God should act—all within the realm of social dynamics, reminding the reader of the importance of the community in the process of working out God’s righteousness.

Finally, we can turn to the first two uses of λόγος in James, both of which bear a note of ambiguity. The λόγος ἀληθείας in 1:18 is the means by which God gives birth to his people. This word of (re)creation echoes the earlier literature about the creative and healing power of the λόγος, of the creative word of God in creation (e.g. Gen. 1; Sir. 12:15). Beyond simply physical healing, this goes to a (re-)birth into existence as a first-fruit in God’s restoration of creation. Adults are reborn by the word, bringing in echoes of Nicodemus and his conversation with Jesus (Jn. 3:1-21). At this first occurrence of the λόγος, scholars generally propose three options for its meaning: the Gospel message of rebirth, a reference to original creation of humanity and their creation potential, and a baptismal-catechetical instruction. At this point, however, no conclusions should be drawn as the evidence of the whole text is not yet in play.

The salvific λόγος of 1:18 is quickly followed by the ἐμφυτος λόγος of 1:21. Because of its central position in setting up the “doers of the word” section and the

464 Contrast το δοκίμων ἢς πίστεως κατεργάζεται υπομονήν, ἢ δὲ υπομονὴ ἐργὸν τελείου εὑρέω (1:3-4).
465 Cf. Sir. 42:15; Wisd. 9:1; 16:12; also Matt. 8-9 and its depiction of Jesus’ healing/salvific word discussed above.
467 Jackson-McCabe, Logos and Law, 192, 96.
468 Franz Münter, Der Jakobusbrief (Freiburg: Herder, 1975), 241-43; Laato, “Justification according to James,” 49.
transition to νόμος therein, this second use deserves close examination. There are four main interpretations for λόγος in James 1:21. First, based largely on the qualifier that the λόγος is “able to save your souls,” is the Gospel interpretation. Second, because of the adjective ἐμφυτος, there is the Stoic interpretation of an innate reason or understanding that is restored and thereby able to function in its original created state, allowing people to choose wisdom. Thirdly is a wisdom tradition that sees this λόγος as a continuation of the good gifts from God, of which wisdom is the foremost. And lastly is the understanding of this as referring to Jeremiah’s prophecy of an internalized Torah within the hearts of the people of God now come to fulfillment.

Bauckham and Moo lead a less common final position, positing Jeremiah 31:31-34 as the interpretive background for James’ thought. Moo views the Jeremiah prophecy of a new, internalized covenant as behind this text but sees it as an allusion:

When we consider James’s frequent allusions to Leviticus 19 and his situation early in the life of the Jewish-Christian church, elimination of reference to the OT law seems to be impossible. More helpful is the recognition that James’...
Moo later adds that “James’s language reminds his readers that they have experienced the fulfillment of that wonderful promise. . . . God plants [the logos] within his people, making it a permanent, inseparable part of the believer” that will lead to their ultimate salvation. 474

Bauckham argues that the case for Jeremiah is even stronger. He ties the “implanted word” of 1:21 to the “law of freedom” of 1:25 and 2:12, arguing that they “refer to role of the law in the new covenant of Jeremiah 31(LXX 38):31-34, but this is less a case of allusion than of an exegesis presupposed by James.” 475 According to Bauckham, James’ readers would have followed his interpretation that the Christ event changed the old paradigm, therefore those in Christ define what it means to be “firstfruit.”

These explanations that deal with the word and law in relationship with Jeremiah’s prophecy allow for a smooth transition within the text when James switches from λόγος to νόμος in 1:23-25.476 Likewise, this explanation fits with the Jewish wisdom pattern that the word, like the law, was something to be studied, internalized, and obeyed. The word should shape one’s character.

The adjective ἐμφύτευσ in 1:21 is the primary reason that many seek a Stoic philosophical background to James’ theology but can also support the New Covenant interpretation, making it worth a brief survey. 477 The standard meaning for ἐμφύτευσ is
“inborn, natural.”\textsuperscript{478} Liddell and Scott notes only one occurrence where έμφυτος means “implanted” and that is in James 1:21. They also list this text as the only place where the object of έμφυτος is λόγος. While later Christian authors may pick up on this expression, it is not a common one within the Greco-Roman world.

The precise term έμφυτος is not common in the biblical literature, but the LXX consistently uses the related compound verb καταφυτεύω for the promise of restoration in the land as God’s promised people, beginning as early as Exodus 15:17. Particularly important are the prophetic uses, especially Jeremiah 31:27-28:

“The days are coming,” declares the LORD, “when I will plant (σπέρω; cf. Matt. 13), the house of Israel and the house of Judah with the offspring of men and of animals. Just as I watched over them to uproot and tear down, and to overthrow, destroy and bring disaster, so I will watch over them to build and to plant (καταφυτεύειν),” declares the LORD.

This passage, combining several of the terms for planting, reveals that throughout the Hebrew Bible the metaphor of planting is for God’s work of restoration and that this will be worked out in community. Those who have endured in faithfulness will be planted in God’s time and location, thus ending the diaspora. Without overstating the case, the shared φυ- root helps to strengthen the tie of James to the Jeremiah passage as well as to the prophetic tradition more broadly of God’s promise to restore his faithful (cf. Amos 9:14-15; Ezek. 17:22-23).

Davids notes that the verb φύω appears in the parable of Luke 8:5-15.\textsuperscript{479} There, φύω refers to the seeds that grow up, not to the planting of the seeds. Other scholars join Davids in seeing the parable of the sower more generally (also Matt. 13:3-9, 18-23; Mark 4:2-9) as a possible background to James’ thought here, where the “word preached,” when


\textsuperscript{479} Davids, “James and Jesus,” 71.
it properly takes root, brings about fruit and salvation.\textsuperscript{480} This may support a type of Gospel understanding for the \textit{λόγος} in James since it may be an echo of Jesus’ teaching about the “planting” of the word of God. This story background may also help to clarify the relationship of \textit{ἐμφυτος} to \textit{δὲξασθε}, where the word may be scattered widely but for it to truly take root it must be properly received. The linguistic parallels are not strong enough to establish it as a clear background to James’ thought, however, as Deppe notes.\textsuperscript{481}

Between these two options, it seems reasonable to conclude with Martin that “The idiom [of the implanted word] is . . . OT-Jewish,”\textsuperscript{482} one which Jesus absorbed. The prophetic texts support the legal nature of the “implanted word”: as repeatedly the law was the center of focus for internalization. The text of Jeremiah promises that at the time of the new covenant the law would be written on people’s hearts, and Jesus picks up on this promise and appropriates it for his own work at the cross. James picks up on this theme of new covenant as the way God begins the work of his new creation (1:18), implanting the law within those who follow Christ, thus able to save their souls (1:21) and empowering them to live according to God’s will.\textsuperscript{483}

The strength of Jeremiah 31:27-34 as a background for James is that it presents a new relationship between God and his people. Throughout the Hebrew Bible, God repeatedly indict his people of failing within their covenantal relationship, but here he


\textsuperscript{481} Deppe, \textit{Sayings of Jesus}, 246. He states, “Davids’ thesis . . . is not supportable. First of all the genre is different. . . . Secondly, the use of \textit{ἐμφυτος} is not strange but is paralleled in Barn. 9:9. . . . Finally, this word can better refer to the church’s preaching and teaching than the planting (\textit{φυω}) of the seed in Lk. 8.” In response, however, it might be noted that in both Jesus’ parable and the early church’s “teaching and preaching,” the key to both was the acceptance of and obedience to the word that made it effective.

\textsuperscript{482} Martin, \textit{James}, 49.

promises to make their relationship innate to them. This text is repeatedly quoted throughout the NT in context of the sacrament of the Lord’s Supper. Jesus is cited as quoting it in both Matthew 26:28 and Luke 22:20 as he offers the cup to his disciples, and then Paul alludes to Jesus’ quote in 1 Corinthians 11:25 (less directly in 2 Corinthians 3:6). Likewise, Hebrews 8:8-12 and 10:16-17, both of which cite Jeremiah 31 verbatim, demonstrate that in the NT era the authors viewed the time of the new covenant as having arrived through the work of Jesus at the time of his death and resurrection.\footnote{484} While Martin argues that the “implanted word” “recalls also the baptismal response,”\footnote{485} I would argue that the NT witness to the New Covenant language does not refer to baptism, but to the Eucharist.\footnote{486} Jesus clearly saw his act of death and the act of drinking his blood as signifying the arrival of the New Covenant, one that brings about the forgiveness of sins.

If this can be argued as background for James, it explains both James 1:18 and 1:21. In 1:18, God gives birth to his people λόγος ἀληθείας, where the “word” is the active agent in this birth metaphor. If in James the λόγος is the law of the New Covenant now made internal, the word of truth might reasonably be understood as this new covenant. The birth language then would be God’s action in writing the covenant on his people’s hearts so that they are birthed into a new relationship with God as his children, as ones who know him covenantally through Jesus’ work, the “first fruits” of the day when all will “know God.” Likewise, in 1:21, if the internalization of the new covenant through Jesus’ death and resurrection is in mind, then the “word planted within you” refers to Jeremiah’s promise that God would “put my law in their minds and write it on their hearts,” namely the law of God as mediated through Christ’s life and blood. This understanding also provides the smoothest transition into the νόμος as James uses it in

\footnote{484} Texts like Acts 10:43, 1 Cor. 3:3, 1 John 2:27 make the same point but less explicitly.
\footnote{485} Martin, James, 49.
\footnote{486} Cf. Matt. 26:28: “This is my blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins” (τοῦτο γὰρ ἐστιν τὸ αἷμα μου τῆς διαθήκης τὸ περὶ πολλῶν ἐκχυσθέντος εἰς ἀφεσίν ἠμαρτιῶν).
1:25 and following, as there is not the difficulty of a sudden change of referent. As the implanted new covenant, the λόγος is a law which God’s people will finally know and obey.

How then does one receive something that is “implanted” (1:21)? On the whole there is a general agreement that gives a practical parallel to the “removing” (ἀποθέμενοι) in the first half of the verse. Painter notes the “call to ‘receive’ is at the same time a call to reject contrary ways of life.” 487 Ropes argues that the verb refers “not to the mere initial acceptance of the gospel, preached and heard, but (cf. ἐμφύτου) to attention to the knowledge of God’s will.” 488 Carpenter comments that the “word is to be received, and turned as it were into a part of our own nature.” 489 Cargal agrees, adding that this does not necessarily mean “obey,” but rather an internalization of this word so that it becomes a part of their nature. 490 More than strict obedience to a word, this receiving of the λόγος transforms one’s very nature, again paralleling the promised reality in Jeremiah 31. Wall notes that this word “must be ‘received’ (i.e., followed) for redemption to have its full result. Salvation is a collaborative enterprise between a gracious God and an obedient humanity, where mutual obligations must be met in order for promised blessings to be dispensed.” 491 Such an interpretation fits well within the context of James in which God, by his grace, gave new birth to his people and yet requires obedient action that shows that one is among this new people.

In 1:12-21, then, we are introduced to the option of living by one’s desires, a theme played out first in vv. 13-15 with its dangerous ending and reiterated with the command to ἀποθέμενοι πᾶσαν ῥυμαρίαν καὶ περισσείαν κακίας in 1:21. In contrast, the theme of endurance in 1:12 parallels the proper reception of the word in 1:21,

---

488 Ropes, Epistle of St. James, 172.
489 Carpenter, Wisdom of James, 144.
490 Cargal, Restoring the Diaspora, 89.
491 Wall, Community of the Wise, 72.
a reception done ἐν πραύτητι because the word itself is given only as a gift from God (1:18). This word, described variously as ἀληθείας, ἐμφυτος, and δυνάμενον σῶσαι τὰς ψυχὰς ὑμῶν, has redemptive power as both the means by which birth into the new creation occurs but also requiring reception on the part of the individual. God, meanwhile, is further developed as the generous giver (cf. 1:5) who willingly gives his word to his people that they might be a new creation, distinct in life and thought, not driven by desires and their evil inclination but given to humility, endurance and obedience, even as they are τοῖς ἀγαπῶσιν αὐτὸν.


This passage contains the shift from λόγος to νόμος that is central to James’ theology of obedience and salvation, and concludes with what is most likely the thesis statement of the letter. The λόγος may be the means of our initial rebirth, but verses 22-25 make clear that it is also “the perfect law of liberty.” As Richardson notes, “What James referred to as the ‘Word’ in vv. 18,21,22,23 he calls the ‘law’ here. As the ‘Word’ brings new life according to v. 18, so ‘the law’ here is what sets us free.”892 Johnson agrees with an inclusive reading of the “word/law,” for “too great a distinction should not be made between Gospel, Torah, and the word of creation, since for James they all represent gifts of God.”893

James focuses on each person’s obedience to the word. Now that the λόγος has been “received” in its implanting, the next step is obedience. The λόγος is to be studied closely in order that it can be obeyed. Here James’ language closely overlaps with earlier wisdom language about the requirements of hearing and fulfilling the words of the

---

892 Kurt A. Richardson, James, (Nashville: Broadman & Holman, 1997), 97. In reference to the two modifiers of law in 1:25, he adds, “The combination of law and freedom points to the free obedience of the Christian life and echoes Paul’s theology of freedom in Christ. . . . The law is ‘perfect’ in that it participates in the goodness of God and is essential to his gifts bestowed in wisdom to believers. . . . The absence of a reference in James to any law other than that contained within the Ten Commandments or that which sums them up in acts of love and mercy supports” his understanding of “the law as testimony to the active Word” (97-98).

893 Johnson, James, 214.
teacher. One can also hear an echo of Jesus’ parable in Matthew 13 where it is the seed that bears fruit of obedience that is saved. The “words” of the wise were always to be studied and obeyed. To hear and not obey reveals one as a fool (Matt. 7:24-27). The ἀκροαταὶ λόγου are like those who build on the sand in Matthew’s picture, hence the importance of being ποιηταὶ λόγου. In James also, the word is meant for study and obedience to avoid self-deception. This self-deception (παραλογιζόμενοι έαυτούς), like the deception warned against already (1:16), has vital implications. While the ἀκροαταὶ λόγου is condemned, the ποιηταὶ λόγου receives a rare macarism (see 1:12): ἐν τῇ ποιήσει αὐτοῦ ἔσται. The blessing apparently does not only reside in a future “salvation,” but also in the present. This passage emphasises being a ποιητής: urging the audience to be both ποιηταὶ λόγου (1:22, 23) and individually ποιητὴς ἔργου (1:25, the second use of ἔργου). While the usual problematic dilemma in James is “faith and works,” ἔργου seemingly can be another expression for the word/law already explored, and 1:22-25 presents that the readers should be doers of the word, the law, and of works: the received implanting leads to doing. This warning sets up the forthcoming discussion on faith and works: each person who claims to be a “hearer” ought to be a “doer” as well.

Martin highlights the importance of the link between λόγος and νόμος in James 1. He takes νόμος here as both the new covenant of Jeremiah 31:33 (introduced by the “implanted word” of James 1:21) and the love command of Leviticus 19:18 (to be highlighted in James 2:8). He argues that “the perfect law” is none other than the ‘word implanted’ in the hearts of responsive believers. It is the ‘law’ of love to one’s neighbor as

---

494 Cf. Prov. 4: 28:9, 18; Sir. 0:10; 2:16; 15:1; 19:20; etc. See Schnabel, Law and Wisdom, 46-56.  
495 Johnson, James, 206, notes a textual variant in 1:22 which substitutes “doers of the law” (ποιηταὶ νόμου) for ποιηταὶ λόγου, “undoubtedly to be attributed to the influence of 4:11.” He notes the relation that then bears to Rom. 2:13.  
496 Cf. the promise of En. 99:10.  
497 Martin, James, lxxi. He agrees with Müsner regarding the baptismal reference in 1:18. He states in his introduction: “More probably the ‘perfect law’ and the ‘royal law’ relate to love for one’s neighbor in Lev. 19:18.”
well as the law written on the human heart. Both ideas stem from the eschatological fulfillment of the new covenant prophecy of Jer 31:31-34.498 He argues the “law” in James is that which Jesus taught, which neither equals nor abandons the Torah but “includes, expands, and deepens the demands of the ‘old’ law.”499 This new covenant law was taught by Jesus as the new lawgiver, but is now implanted within the followers of Jesus.

James’ expression νόμον τέλειον τῶν τῆς ἔλευθερίας (1:25; 2:12) does not have an exact parallel in the Jewish texts, but his modifiers warrant a closer look. James only employs ἔλευθερία twice, both times in relation to νόμος. It is a rare term, however, appearing only nine times in the Septuagint and Pseudepigrapha500 and nine other times in the NT.501 By using this term James intentionally emphasizes the freedom component of the law.502 The question stands, however, whether James intends a “law which brings freedom” to those who obey it, or a “law whose very nature is freedom.” This question cannot be fully answered until the second use of this phrase in 2:12.

The adjective τέλειος also provides illumination.503 James himself is not entirely consistent with his use, but generally when the noun τέλειος refers to humans it entails maturity and completion, whereas when it refers to divine things, it implies true perfection as a reflection of the divine character. If this reading is correct, it seems reasonable that this use of τέλειος refers to the law as “perfect” because it was given by God (as one of his

498 Ibid., 51. In terms of the freedom aspect of this law, he goes on to state that the fulfillment of the Jeremiah prophecy “is evidently what James means by τῆς ἔλευθερίας. . . . Freedom is not from the works of the law. . . . , but rather it connotes a release from self-interest and a new capacity to practice God’s will in the interests of one’s needy neighbor” (51).
499 Ibid., 67.
500 It appears once in Leviticus 19:20 as related to an “unfreed” slave woman. The rest of the appearances are in 1 Esdras, 1 and 3 Maccabees, Sirach, and the Sibylline Oracles.
501 Rom. 8:21; 1 Cor. 10:29; 2 Cor. 3:17; Gal. 2:4; 5:1, 13 x 2; 1 Pet. 2:16; 2 Pet. 2:19. The three uses in Gal. 5 all relate to freedom from the Law in Paul’s allegory of Hagar and Sarah. The adjective ἔλευθερίας has a further 23 occurrences, 14 in Rom., 1 Cor. and Gal. alone, one in Matt. and two in John, but none in James.
502 Wall, Community of the Wise, 92, notes, “While the Torah’s perfection is known from Jewish literature . . . the Torah’s ‘liberty’ is not, and we can only speculate about its possible sources.” He then finds a kind of “Jubilee theology” occurring where in “‘liberty’ in this rhetorical setting is a catchword that gathers to itself the images of neighborly love for poor and oppressed believers found in the levitical laws of holiness, and especially within the Jubilee ordinance” (95).
503 These two uses with the law plus 1:4 x 2, 17, 25; 3:2. Other related terms appear once each: τελεύω (2:8); τελείον (2:22); and τέλος (5:11).
“perfect gifts”, 1:17) and perfectly represents his will for his followers. Kistemaker argues that the law is perfect in an absolute sense. It is changeless, a “law of God through Jesus Christ [that] sets man free from the bondage of sin and selfishness.” The law’s ability to set people free from the bondage of sin then qualifies it as “of freedom,” borrowing a fairly Pauline frame but also echoing Jesus in John 8:36. Again, a final discussion of this must wait until 2:12.

Finally, verses 26-27, which potentially form the thesis statement of the letter—particularly the positive expression of 1:27—give crucial insight into James’ theology, for they define what does and does not please God. While the three ideas have not necessarily all been in such proximity as in James’ formulation, in earlier texts they are unsurprising: control of the tongue, care for the poor and marginalized, and moral purity. James’ language is more intriguing, though. While a term like ἡρσκεία does not necessarily have negative connotations, James’ idiom between the two verses sets up a strong distinction. The modifiers δοκεῖ and ἀπατῶν καρδίαν αὐτοῦ in 1:26 instantly give the impression of a religion of externals and regulations followed, such as might be used today when asking if someone is “religious.” The arrogance and self-delusion of this person can be witnessed in uncontrolled speech, a single symptom which exposes his religion as worthless and vain. This echoes Jesus’ exegetical trouncing of the Pharisees in Matthew 15:8-11 (par. Mk. 7), quoting Isaiah 29:13. There the use of μάτημα parallels James’ description of this religion as μάταιος, and in these contexts we see a development of the thought that concern with the details of the law without a

504 Contra Mayor, St. James, 68, who concludes that “The law of liberty is called τέλειος . . . because it carries out, completes, realizes, the object and meaning of the Mosaic law which it replaces (Matt. v. 17).” This fails to account for the evidence he gives of the Mosaic law itself being consistently called “perfect” and a law that brings “liberty.”


506 See Blomberg and Kamell, James, 83, for a defense of 1:27 as the thesis statement, while Lockett, Purity and Worldview, 97, argues “it is better to speak of 1.26—27 as James’s attempt to distill the thrust of his argument into a short, memorable saying. In this way he is not summarizing the entire content of 1.2-27 (or the rest of the letter), but encapsulating the basic wisdom of his letter in a few short lines.”

507 See also Prov. 10:19; 17:27; Sir. 4:29; Wisd. 1:11; En. 100:9; 104:11; Ps. Pho. 125.
corresponding internal transformation—revealed by uncontrolled speech—leaves one with religion only describable as μάταιος.

Meaningful θρησκεία is possible, as revealed in 1:27. This verse captures James’ two other core concerns: that people would proactively care for the disenfranchised and equally remain ἁσπιλος from the taint of the world. This moral purity is not an isolationist policy, an idea that has been floated several times wherein one avoids all contact with “others” in case “they” taint one. James is far from isolationist, for that clearly does not fit the context of helping the poor and oppressed. Instead, the command is to visit the distressed, helping them in their difficulty, whether by bringing food or by working to change the larger social structures that leave them “in distress.” This is worship that pleases God, the active mercy that mirrors God’s heart of generosity just seen in 1:17-18. Having a proper perspective regarding the poor and disenfranchised is one sign of moral purity. Where one stained by the κόσμος accepts the values and priorities of the world, being “unstained” (ἁσπιλος) is to be shaped by God’s values of generosity and care for the helpless. The κόσμος is the entire worldview that stands in opposition to God, one to which people all-too-readily ascribe.

508 See, e.g., Friesen, “Injustice or God’s Will,” 244, who sees James as presenting on the whole “a relatively simple explanation for economic inequality. Jacob [sic] blamed the local elites for economic injustice but also criticizes the general population for complicity.” Later, however, Friesen finds James faulting the larger Roman “status system” (245) while condemning his congregation’s participation in a system driven by wealth.

509 See Roberts, “Definition of ‘Pure Religion’,” 215-16, and more recently Trudinger, “Epistle of James,” 61-63. The response of Johanson, “Definition of ‘Pure Religion’,” 118-19, however, suffices for both attempts to make this claim. See also Lockett, Purity and Worldview, 187-88, who notes in contrast to Roberts and Trudinger that “the composition is not calling for sectarian separation from the surrounding culture, but rather . . . is a complex document demonstrating a degree of cultural accommodation while at the same time calling forth specific socio-cultural boundaries between the reader and the world.”

510 Martin, James, 55, calls this a “summons to do what lies in [the readers’] power: to come to the aid of the defenseless members of society and reach out actively on their behalf (1:27). Wall, Community of the Wise, 101, warns that “even conventional social wisdom instructs that a group is as viable as its weakest member (cf. Matt. 18:6-14; Acts 6:1-10). For this reason, the biblical Torah is especially concerned that the least and last members of the community are not abused but cared for (Exod. 22:22; Deut. 24:17-21; cf. Ps. 146:9; Isa. 1:17; et al.), since God is their champion (Deut. 10:18),” and that by acting thus, one “anticipates the inevitable reversal.”

511 Wachob, Voice of Jesus, 83, observes, “The use of the prepositional phrase παρὰ τῶ θεῶ καὶ πατρὶ (‘before God, the Father’) and ἀπὸ τοῦ κόσμου (‘from the world’) clearly suggest an opposition between God and the world.”

512 See Lockett, Purity and Worldview, 117.
There is some question, however, of whether ἀσπιλος also indicates ritual purity and a command to obey the entire Law as relates to its ritual, not simply moral, commands—again raising the question of what the ποιηται are to be doing. While Dibelius argues that “‘unstained’ must be completely restricted here to its ethical sense,” Painter is less convinced that a distinction between ritual and moral law is possible:

The language of 1:27 includes vocabulary directly related to ritual purity alongside language concerning social and moral responsibilities. It is unjustifiable to assume, without any indication from James, that the language of ritual purity should be understood metaphorically of moral purity. Rather, 1:27 expresses both moral and ritual obligations arising from the law.

In contrast, Elliott argues that James deals with fractious and divisive community by “[invoking] traditional distinctions of purity and pollution to press for a restoration of holiness and wholeness in the Christian community and a reinforcement of its distinctive ethos.” James, in line with other wisdom writers, does not emphasize ritual qua ritual, but ritual only insofar as it highlights other concerns. Here the context is of James 1:26 and its relation to Isaiah and Jesus’ condemnation over the worthlessness of those who “worship” without inward transformation, shown through uncontrolled speech. While James the Just historically may have practiced full ritual obedience, the epistle instead fits within the wisdom world such as Proverbs where, for example, the adjective καθαρος appears five times generally relating to moral purity and a clean heart. James calls his readers to a morality that will, by necessity, look very different from the world around.

---

513 Dibelius, *James*, 122. This because the epistle does not deal with the Gentile debate, a circumstance which for him “also raises a serious objection to the authenticity of the document.”

514 Painter, “The Power of Words,” 251. He begins, “This easy separation of the moral and ritual elements in the law is nowhere suggested by the letter of James and is not supported by evidence from the first century. Indeed there was no characteristic linguistic distinction to describe ritual and moral elements of the law. The assertion of the necessity to keep the whole law does not suggest exemption from certain aspects of it.”


516 See also Jesus’ censure toward the Scribes and Pharisees in Matt. 23 for this very problem.

517 The adjective ἀσπιλος does not appear in the LXX and only four times in the NT: here, 1 Tim. 6:14; 1 Pet. 1:19; 2 Pet. 3:14. Two of the other times it refers to keeping oneself “unblemished” for the Lord’s coming, much as the Law required in sacrifice, and the third refers to Christ himself as a spotless lamb for sacrifice. In each of these cases the moral outweighs the ritual application of the term.
B. JAMES 2

In contrast to the introductory nature of chapter 1, James 2 has sustained sections of argumentation. It continues all the issues raised in chapter one in greater depth: proper relationships in the community, judgment according to one’s obedience to God’s kingdom law, and God’s divine mercy. While the entire chapter is crucial for this thesis, the argument here focuses particularly on 2:12-13 as the summary of James’ view of final salvation.


This section begins with the elusive πίστις Χριστοῦ formulation. What does it mean “to hold” the faith of, or in, Christ in favoritism? This is the only example in James where θην πίστιν could be objective, wherein faith is in Christ in a belief sense. James could also refer here to the model of Jesus’ faith (subjective), whereby one ought not debase Christ’s own faithfulness by acting so contrarily even within the community. While both are possible, the former makes more sense as a warning introductory this entire chapter against attempts to claim faith in Christ while failing to live according to his teaching. The text has made clear, God/Jesus’ faithfulness to all people is unquestioned.

The example that follows condemns appearance-based judgments. James reveals the greeter’s pretensions as he interacts with two newcomers, highlighting the communal nature of such sins. Whether or not the wealthy person is a believer is irrelevant for this

---

518 Resuming the high Christology from 1:1, 2:1 adds the descriptor, Jesus Christ θης δόξης. See Jack Freeborn, “Lord of Glory: A Study of James 2 and 1 Corinthians 2,” EvQ 111 (2000), 185-89, for the Christological implications of this expanded title. He observes that in James we see “the glory of God himself,” even though “James did not articulate this pattern fully” (186). The pattern that emerges is of “the poor man’s champion, the impartial judge who cares for the ‘widow and orphan’, the brilliant teacher and healer is now to be understood as the epitome of God’s wisdom” (187).

519 Childs, New Testament as Canon, 436, observes, “In 2.1 the writer uses the objective genitive to speak of a faith in Jesus Christ against which faithful human behaviour is measured. Partiality is an attribute which is incompatible with the glory of Christ.”

520 Blomberg, James, 106.

521 Throughout James phrases such as ἐν ἑαυτοῖς (2:4) or ἀλλήλων (4:9; 5:9, 16) reveal the collective failure, emphasizing that the community should be different from their surrounding culture.
particular illustration.\footnote{George M. Stulac, “Who Are ‘The Rich’ in James?” *Presbyterion* 16 (1990), 91-92, notes, “There were ‘some wealthy individuals’ coming into the church as new converts, these are the ones James would have in mind in 2:2 and 4:13. But James avoids calling them ‘the rich’ and reserves the term *plousios* as a uniformly offensive term.” Whether the ones in 2:2 are actually “new converts” coming into the church is questionable, but his assessment of the term *πλούσιος* is legitimate.} The problem is the response of the people inside as they defer to the wealthy person simply because of the display of their wealth and debase the poor person simply because of their apparent poverty. It is this simplicity that earns them the title “judges with evil opinions.” The term for their discrimination, *διακρίνω*, is the same for the doubter in 1:6, revealing seriously flawed patterns of thought. Their internal and interpersonal dialogue reveals a fundamentally faulty value system as they accept the self-importance of the wealthy person as accurate, forgetting that the Glory of God chose to identify instead with the impoverished of the world. Their actions reveal a failure to be *ἀσπιλας... ἀπὸ τοῦ κόσμου* (1:27).

James drives home the point with the reminder that God has chosen the impoverished as his own.\footnote{Johnson, *James*, 233, argues that 2:5 is an implicit statement of God’s role as judge.} Bauckham observes, “This paradox brilliantly encapsulates the Jewish tradition of regarding the pious poor as the paradigms of faith.”\footnote{Bauckham, “Wisdom of James,” 85. He adds, “The first hearers/readers of James might have been reminded of Jesus’ beatitude, but it does not seem to me at all necessary to the rhetorical force of the saying in its context that they should do so.” In contrast, Deppe, *Sayings of Jesus*, 90-91, argues that this saying is at least dependant upon a saying of Jesus, partly because of the presence of “kingdom,” which “is not Jamesian vocabulary.” He concludes “this verse is a combination of the church’s experience with a promise of Jesus” (91).} Here the *πτωχός* are the materially destitute, a physical—not spiritual—state. Problematically, 2:2-5 are often taken to make a very simple economic equation for salvation: the poor are saved and the rich cannot be.\footnote{E.g. Maynard-Reid, *Poverty and Wealth*, 62-63, who states, “This verse poses a problem especially in Christian communities where there are many wealthy members. Is there a doctrine of election being taught here—a doctrine which excludes all rich from final salvation or even the experience of faith? Some have attempted to solve the problem by noting that the election of the poor is not ‘due to any merit of their poverty, but in fact, poverty and election coincide.’ The rich are then placated with an assurance that ‘this does not deny that an occasional rich man may have become a Christian.’ [See Ropes, 193-94] Such an addendum does not seem to be in the mind of the writer. For him the rich are outside the sphere of salvation and faith... the vulgar idea that one’s wealth is a sign of divine favor, is rejected by Jesus and James.” The *πτωχός*, however, are further nuanced as chosen to...
be πλουσίους ἐν πίστει, the only correct sort of πλουσίος in the epistle and an honor granted to “those loving” God.\textsuperscript{526}

The wording at the end of 2:5 exactly parallels that at the end of 1:12. In 1:12, the subject is the one who endures, while in 2:5 the poor are the subject and called “rich in faith,” but together the promises stand thus:

\begin{quote}
τὸν στέφανον τῆς ζωῆς ἐπηγγείλατο τοῖς ἀγαπώσιν αὐτὸν
κληρονόμος τῆς βασιλείας ἐπηγγείλατο τοῖς ἀγαπώσιν αὐτὸν
\end{quote}

In the one the promise is of the kingdom, in the other a crown, but the intent—and outcome—is clearly the same: a “crown of life” parallels being “heirs of the kingdom.”\textsuperscript{527} Crucially, in both verses the promises are τοῖς ἀγαπώσιν αὐτὸν. Endurance or poverty are meaningless without a proper focus: persistence in faithful love of God. By repeating ἐπηγγείλατο τοῖς ἀγαπώσιν αὐτὸν, the text defines the recipients of the gifts as more than simply those who grit their teeth or are impoverished.

James’ language of election in 2:5 (ἐξελέξατο) echoes 1:18 and the willingness of God to give his people new birth, emphasizing again God’s freedom of choice both of the audience as a whole (1:18) and of the destitute in particular (2:5), thereby placing them on equal footing. Bauckham notes that this is one place in the epistle where the arrival of God’s kingdom is not solely reserved for the future: “That God has chosen the poor means that their status in his eyes and in those of faith (2:5) is already changed. Honouring the poor is the radical transvaluation of values already incumbent on the Christian community (2:1-9).”\textsuperscript{528} Again, this election is two sided: the poor are not promised wealth but wealth in faith, and their status as heirs depends on their status as those who love

\textsuperscript{526} Laws, The Epistle of James, 103, provides a helpful balance: “It would seem that for James the poor are to be seen as the natural members of the community (cf. i. 9). Yet he stops short of an unqualified idealization of poverty as the distinguishing mark of membership.”

\textsuperscript{527} These echo Jesus’ teaching on the kingdom. The link with Matthew 5:3 is particularly profound: Μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοὶ τῷ πνεύματι, ὅτι αὐτῶν ἐστιν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν, although 5:10 also finishes with the promise ὅτι αὐτῶν ἐστιν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν for the ones persecuted for the sake of righteousness. One might possibly draw parallels of Jas. 1:12 = Matt. 5:10 and Jas. 2:5 = Matt. 5:3, as James re-sets these sayings of Jesus.

\textsuperscript{528} Bauckham, James, 104.
God.\footnote{See Kamell, “Economics,” 157-75, for the distinction between \textit{πτωχός} and \textit{ταπεινός} in James’ theology, which concludes the contrast for final salvation is between the “rich” and the “humble.”} With these qualifications in place to prevent misapplication, James’ point remains: those who dishonor the poor dishonor Christ and show themselves ignorant of God’s purposes.

2. Life in the Law of Liberty: James 2:8-13

This section seemingly presents the highest view of the Mosaic Law, with its reference to two of the commands of the Decalogue, its absolutist view of the unity of the Law, and its arguable divide between the Mosaic Law and the new “law of freedom.” It contains five of the ten uses of \textit{νόμος} in the epistle and contains the most extended discussion on the nature of the law. For James there is one law, the unified representation of the will of the “one Lawgiver” (4:12). Several linguistic issues arise, namely the use of the adjective \textit{βασιλικός} in 2:8 and the second use of \textit{νόμος ἐλευθερίας} in relation to judgment in 2:12. Finally, James 2:12-13 form the center of James’ soteriology through the contrast of judgment and mercy.

\textit{a. The νόμος βασιλικός: James 2:8}

There are a number of interpretations for this expression. Johnson argues that much of the Epistle refers back to the Holiness Code and specifically the commands of Leviticus 19, which would place the emphasis of law in this letter on the moral codes.\footnote{See his article, “The Use of Leviticus 19 in the Letter of James,” in Luke Timothy Johnson, \textit{Brother of Jesus, Friend of God} (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 2004), 123-35. The legal-ethical code of Leviticus 19 plays an important part of James’ exposition of the requirements of the law, with analogous commands against partiality, for love of neighbor, for concern for the poor (including paying wages promptly), justice in judgment, and wrong uses of the tongue. As Johnson contends, understanding Leviticus 19 as a possible background to James helps clarify conceptual links even where there are not explicit verbal links. Leviticus 19, part of the Holiness Code of the Torah, clarifies how the people of Israel were to live in the land. Because James calls Leviticus 19:18b the “royal law,” he emphasizes the law of love as essential.} Specifically he argues that the \textit{νόμος} in James refers to Leviticus 19:18 and the law of love there as the summary of the entire Torah, a synopsis Jesus reiterates. Johnson states “James can speak of the law positively as ‘law of liberty’ and ‘perfect law’ and ‘royal law’—
meaning thereby, the law of love in Lev. 19:18.”\(^{531}\) James’ νόμος βασιλικός may reflect a standard view concerning Leviticus 19:18 or a reference to Jesus’ teaching in Matthew 22:37-40. If Johnson’s analysis is correct and Leviticus 19:12-18 stands behind the message of James, then there may be justification to see the “law” in James as the moral requirements on the people of God.\(^{532}\)

Others view James’ referent as the Mosaic Torah in total, with perhaps some preference for the moral aspects of it. For example, Wall argues that in texts like 1:22-25 and 2:14-26 more particularly, the vocabulary “underscores the requirements of a Torah-observant faith.”\(^{533}\) This obedience then leads to wisdom: “the Torah tradition actually defines the way of wisdom: wisdom ‘heard’ is the whole Torah observed.”\(^{534}\) For Wall, the νόμος in James is the Mosaic Law, to which James still holds his audience accountable.\(^{535}\) Viviano argues for a Torah interpretation as well, arguing that “Jaques représente ainsi une forme de Judéo-christianisme fidèle à la Torah . . . [et] ne mentionne pas les observances rituelles, non pas parce qu’il les rejette… mais pour des raisons de genre littéraire (il écrit non pas une halacha, mais une œvre d’exhortation moral . . .).”\(^{536}\) He argues that the allusions in James to a variety of commands reveals James’ commitment to the whole law,

---

\(^{531}\) Johnson, *James*, 61. He gives the helpful summary of previous opinions: “At the very least, the use of the figure of the mirror suggests that he saw it as containing an *exempla* of moral behavior . . ., as was seen by Oecumenius. Bede . . . takes the ‘law of liberty’ to mean the grace of the Gospel, and Theophylact identifies it with the ‘Law of Christ.’”

\(^{532}\) See also Laws, *The Epistle of James*, 110; Wiard Popkes, “The Law of Liberty (James 1:25; 2:12),” in *Festschrift Günter Wagner*, ed. Faculty of Baptist Theological Seminary (Bern: Peter Lang, 1994), 134; Richardson, *James*, 46. One difficulty is that the unusual use of νόμος to refer to a single law. Hort, *Epistle of St James*, 54, however, argues: “There is no difficulty in thus applying so wide a term νόμος to a single precept, since the precept itself was so comprehensive,” and uses the law of love as the interpretive grid for the rest of the law (53).

\(^{533}\) Wall, *Community of the Wise*, 87.

\(^{534}\) Ibid., 98.

\(^{535}\) Sawicki, “Person or Practice?,” 398, agrees: “To show partiality is to commit sin and break the law—not only the νόμος βασιλικός but the detailed Mosaic Law as well (2:9-11). Why? . . . To break any one law is to break them all, since each particular law is a facet of the νόμος βασιλικός.”

\(^{536}\) Viviano, “La Loi Parfaite,” 221.
but adds that “la base la plus sûre pour fonder notre thèse se trouve en 2,10,” a supposed polemical argument against Paul.\footnote{Ibid., 222. He concludes that throughout history the traditions of Paul and James have stood in “une danse dialectique entre au moins deux sotériologies différentes” (226).}

Jackson-McCabe regards this section as referring to the Decalogue at the very least. He views 2:8-12 as essential to our understanding James’ view of \( \nu \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \) “as the only passage in the entire work in which the author explicitly identifies commands included in this law.”\footnote{Jackson-McCabe, \textit{Logos and Law}, 155.} He adds that “the only commands explicitly attributed to the ‘law of freedom’ are all from the Torah,” and thus it is “quite clear that the author assumes, at the very least, a close relationship between the scriptural law and the law of freedom—and thus between the Torah and the implanted \textit{logos}.”\footnote{Ibid., 163-64.} This understanding of James’ law as the Mosaic Law makes sense of the adjective “perfect,” for that language was often found to refer to the law in the previous Jewish literature, but does not necessarily explain the epithet “of freedom.”

Others create a sharp divide between the Mosaic law and this new “royal law . . . of freedom.”\footnote{For example, see the following while recognizing they each have their own nuance: Hort, \textit{Epistle of St James}, 41; Moo, \textit{James}, 94, 117; Ropes, \textit{Epistle of St. James}, 178; Franz Schnider, \textit{Der Jakobusbrief} (Regensburg: Friedrich Pustet, 1987), 51.} Bede argues for a preference on ethics, but sounds more like Paul: “Just as \textit{the law} of slavery is what \textit{was given by Moses}, so the law of liberty is \textit{the grace} of the Gospel which \textit{came through Jesus Christ}.”\footnote{Bede, \textit{The Commentary on the Seven Catholic Epistles}, trans. David Hurst (Kalamazoo, Mich.: Cistercian Publications, 1985), 25-26. For him, “the grace of the Gospel [is] the perfect law of liberty” (20).} He emphasizes the practice of charity as the crucial piece to fulfilling this new law. Dibelius also argues for the ethical character of the law, but states confidently that the substance of the law can be identified. “The expression ‘perfect law of freedom . . . is completely explained, as far as its content is concerned, by the context. . . . [The] ‘law’ is to be understood here: as the norm of Christian piety.”\footnote{Dibelius, \textit{James}, 116.} He agrees with those who separate this law in James from the Mosaic or Jewish law, and indicates a
preference for importing a Stoic background where Reason is the law (as seen in 4 Maccabees).\textsuperscript{543} Isaacs also agrees with the separation of a new moral law, positing this as “law of Christ . . . i.e., the will of God expressed in Jesus’ words and deeds, by which his followers should live.”\textsuperscript{544} She argues that James “ethicizes” the law, transforming it from one concerned with rituals and boundary markers into one that “refers to acts of compassion for the weak and vulnerable who are exploited by the world.”\textsuperscript{545}

One last interpretation sees the “royal law” as best translated as the “law of the kingdom,” the entirety of what Jesus taught and inaugurated.\textsuperscript{546} This does not necessitate a strong break between the Mosaic Law and the “law of freedom,” but does see an interpretive divide occurring in Jesus who refines and reissues the law under the dual heading of “love God and love your neighbor.” Moo summarizes: the “‘royal law’ might be James’s way of referring to the sum total of demands that God, through Jesus, imposes on believers. . . . Understood in this sense, the ‘royal law’ extends beyond the Mosaic law as fulfilled and reinterpreted by Jesus to include the teaching of Jesus.”\textsuperscript{547} In this, James’ term \textit{basilikōn} refers to the law of the kingdom of God as taught by Jesus, who is himself the “glory” of God. An expansion of Johnson’s emphasis on Leviticus 19, this seems the best understanding for the adjective.

\textit{b. Judgment \textit{úpo toû vóμου: James 2:9-11}}

Thematically, in 2:8-12 (in which five references to \textit{vómos} occur) and 4:11 (four references), the theme of judgment is explicitly related to the law, and judgment may well be implicit in 1:25 as well, for there the person who obeys is “blessed in his or her doing.” The law is the standard by which God judges his people, a standard both strict and freeing.

\textsuperscript{543} Ibid., 116-20.
\textsuperscript{544} Marie E. Isaacs, \textit{Reading Hebrews and James: A Literary and Theological Commentary} (Macon, Geo.: Smyth & Helwys, 2002), 193.
\textsuperscript{545} Ibid., 200
\textsuperscript{546} E.g., Hartin, \textit{Spirituality of Perfection}, 78, although not his earlier work (see Hartin, \textit{James and the Q Sayings}, 93); Davids, \textit{James}, 48-49, 100; Felder, “Wisdom, Law and Social Concern,” 167.
\textsuperscript{547} Moo, \textit{James}, 112. See also Davids, \textit{Epistle of James}, 114; Frankemölle, “Gesetz im Jakobusbrief,” 400-402.
James 2:9-11 also presents an argument for the unity of the Law. He argues for the importance of obedience to the entire law with the stated goal of proving favoritism not a “lesser” sin. To do so, he uses two of the more shocking commands of the Decalogue, murder and adultery. Using an argument from the greater to the lesser, verses 10-11 provide the example that supports the statement of verse 9 that showing favoritism is to “work sin” and brings one under the conviction of the whole law.

Showing partiality places a person in direct disobedience of the kingdom law of neighborly love, even as adultery and murder are clear examples of a failure to love the other. Such failure brings judgment on the one who fails, reiterated twice in this short paragraph: ἀμαρτίαν ἐργάζεσθε ἐλεγχόμενοι ὑπὸ τοῦ νόμου ὡς παράβαται and again, γέγονας παραβάτης νόμου. By failing in neighbor love, they not only fail to obey the law, but they actively “work” sin—entirely the wrong sort of works to be engaged in. There are only two uses of the verb ἐργάζομαι in James (1:20; 2:9), and both times it shows the wrong type of works that the audience is producing. Instead of being ποιητῆς λόγου/ἔργου (1:21, 25), by showing favoritism, they ἀμαρτίαν ἐργάζεσθε and therefore fail according to the very law of which they supposed to be doers.

Likewise, to be accounted as a παραβάτης throughout the wisdom literature consistently indicates one who deserves and falls under the wrath of God’s judgment, and here is no exception. Barton, Veerman, and Wilson explain, “James’ point is not that showing

---

548 Maynard-Reid, Poverty and Wealth, 66-67, is adamant: “Those who discriminate against the poor ‘work sin’ (bamanthian ergazeste) and are convicted as ‘transgressors’ (parabate) of the law. Significantly, James links such partiality with such sins as murder and adultery (v. 11)—an indication of how heinous the crime of discrimination against the poor is to James. Furthermore, the use of the participle elegchomenoi (‘convicted’) in v. 9 indicates that the sin of partiality is against the whole law, not just a single commandment. It is in this context that James writes [v. 10]. . . . And it is also in this connection that v. 13 is presented. Those who discriminate against the poor are breakers of the law because they have failed to show mercy. To such there will be no mercy in the judgment. According to James, then, anyone who honors the rich at the expense of the poor discriminates against those whom God has elected; shows favor to those who oppress God’s chosen—as well as blasphemying God whose possession the poor are; and transgress the whole law of God and is, therefore, in the same category as the murderer and adulterer. That one can expect no mercy in the judgment.”

549 Again supported by Jesus, who intensified and internalized these two commands in Matthew 5:21-30.

550 See Wall, Community of the Wise, 124: “God requires the ‘work’ of the ‘royal law,’ since not to ‘produce’ this work is to break the law, to sin, and therefore to forfeit the hope of participating in the coming triumph of God (2:5, 1:12).”
favoritism is as ‘bad’ as murder, but that no matter what commandment someone breaks, that person is guilty of an offense against God. He or she has violated the will of God. We cannot excuse the sin of favoritism by pointing to the rest of the good we do.”

The law fairly judges each person according to the works they produce, whether they are doers of the law or mere hearers.

c. The Triumph of Mercy: James 2:12-13

These verses comprise two of the most important for James’ theology of final salvation. They are also, however, possibly the most allusive verses. The two verses divide into three sections, with a key question for each: (1) the need for “speaking” and “acting” in relation to the judgment by the “law of freedom,” (2) what “judgment” might be in view, and (3) whose mercy is it that “triumphs” over judgment. The priority of the two verses as a whole appears to be on human mercy as essential for divine forgiveness. James’ conclusions in 2:12-13a make sense if God’s mercy in the final judgment depends upon human actions of mercy because of the prior statements in 1:18 and 21 regarding God’s initial mercy. Here, more than anywhere, we hear echoes of Jesus’ parable of the unmerciful servant and his reiteration of Hosea’s affirmation that God “desires mercy more than sacrifice.”

i. Judgment by the Law of Freedom: 2:12

The “speak” and “act” of James 2:12 summarize the entire totality of a person’s life lived out, internal and external. Every part of life is to be lived \( \omega \delta \chi \nu \mu \)

\( \varepsilon \lambda \varepsilon \upsilon \theta \varepsilon \rho \iota \sigma \varsigma \mu \ell \lambda \nu \tau \varepsilon \zeta \varsigma \kappa \rho \nu \varepsilon \sigma \theta \varsigma \alpha \varsigma \). Here is the second use of the expression \( \nu \mu \sigma \varepsilon \varepsilon \lambda \varepsilon \upsilon \theta \varepsilon \rho \iota \sigma \varsigma \), potentially confusing as it comes directly after a passage emphasizing the unity of the law and citing Mosaic examples, and judgment rests upon whether one has

---

552 In contrast with the discussions regarding the \( \lambda \gamma \omega \varsigma /\nu \mu \sigma \varsigma \) in chapter 1 where the focus was on the content of those terms, here the complication is the elliptical nature of the sayings, particularly in verse 13.
553 Carpenter, *Wisdom of James*, 173, has perhaps the most unique interpretation, for he ends by contradicting James. He states that “The realization of the need of harmony between ourselves and the whole order of
lived according to the law of liberty or not.\textsuperscript{554} Wall notes that “In the present passage, the meaning of ‘law of liberty’ construes its eschatological role and liberating result as a barometer of the community’s devotion to God: in this case, the ‘law of liberty’ is the community’s rule of faith which measures and approves (or disapproves) its fitness for the kingdom of God.”\textsuperscript{555} Brosend agrees: “‘Law,’ above all, is what members of the community are to ‘do,’” most particularly as regards the disadvantaged and the poor within society.\textsuperscript{556}

The “law of freedom” places a high priority on the love of neighbor for its fulfillment. Mußner concludes, “Damit ist schon eindeutig gesagt, daß die Erfüllung des Liebesgebotes den entscheidenden Maßstab beim Gericht abgeben wird, wie es der Lehre Jesu entspricht (vgl. Mt 7,19; 25,31-46).”\textsuperscript{557} This opens the question of what the “judgment” in James 2:12 might be: does James refer to earthly punishment or to eternal damnation? The confusion is legitimate because much of the book focuses on actions within this world, and more importantly, James 2:1-6 uses \textit{kritai} to refer to human judges in a section dealing with human partiality. The section immediately prior on the law, however, indicates that the context has shifted to God as the Judge determining who has fulfilled the law.

This “judgment” of James 2:12 appears to be the final, eschatological judgment. Moo observes, “A new twist is added here. For the first time, James warns about eschatological judgment and suggests that conformity to the demands of the law will be

---

\textsuperscript{554} One way to understand the freedom of this law is that it presents right and wrong and then gives the freedom of choice (cf. Rom. 5:13). James’ emphasis on actions is thus the exercise of freedom whereby one makes concrete one’s faith.

\textsuperscript{555} Wall, \textit{Community of the Wise}, 127.

\textsuperscript{556} Brosend, \textit{James and Jude}, 68-69.

\textsuperscript{557} Mußner, \textit{Der Jakobusbrief}, 126.
the criterion of that judgment." The preposition διά is crucial for understanding the judgment that occurs here. Laws notes that "διά with the genitive normally serves to identify the agent or instrument of action, so that the law might be seen as the agent of judgment, as in Jn vii. 51 (cf. the law as ‘convicting’ in Jas ii. 9)." Popkes notes, "The law itself will be an active factor (dia is instrumental: ‘by, through’, not just ‘according to’) in the last judgment. Apparently the law of liberty is regarded as valid law, both by James and his readers." Johnson supports the notion that the law will be the agent by which judgment will occur, arguing, "The διά here expresses the means used by God for judgment. God judges on the basis of the measure that has been revealed to humans." As will be seen with “mercy” in 2:13b, perhaps there is reason for seeing a subtle personification of the law here as the one standing up at the final judgment accusing or justifying the individual according to its own integrity.

This forms the standard by which James’ audience should live, guiding their lives and interactions with one another. Judgment looms near (as seen by the μέλλοντες in 2:12 and the warning ἰδοῦ ὁ κρίτης πρὸ τῶν θυρών ἔστηκεν in 5:9) and, James argues, will be based on how they have lived out this law, which has at its core the principle of love of God and neighbor. But more than a simple measurement, this νόμος is a dynamic part of the final judgment process, the integral prosecutor or defender in the law court of the one Judge, a scenario James views as imminent.

James’ warning acts as a restatement of Jesus’ warnings that everyone faces judgment and that obedience is both expected and required of his followers. Judgment,

558 Moo, James, 116.
559 Laws, The Epistle of James, 116. She opts, however, for the more confusing interpretation that διά “indicates the state or condition in which an action is performed; the law of freedom, cf. i. 25, is the framework or context within which thy speak and act, and the future judgment will take account of that fact (so Ropes and Hort; the idea will be that of Rom. ii. 12).”
561 Johnson, James, 233.
James warns, will be based on how each person “speaks” and “acts,” on whether one has lived according to the “law of freedom.” Townsend warns:

It is important to remember that it is by our obedience or otherwise to the will of God that we shall be judged. No doubt there is a tension here, between on the one hand God’s gracious acceptance of us though we cannot deserve it, and on the other God’s judgement of us on the basis of what we do. If so, it is not a tension peculiar to James. It is present also in the teachings of Paul (contrast Rom. 5.6-11; 8.31-34 with Rom. 2.12-13; I Cor. 3.13-15; II Cor. 5.10). But regarding James 2:12, it seems reasonable to conclude that James teaches that the eschatological judgment will be done in accordance with each person’s actions as they relate to the law of freedom, especially whether they choose to love their (poorer) neighbors in a practical manner.

ii. The Lex Talionis of Judgment Without Mercy: 2:13a

The lex talionis has a great deal of precedent in the literature surveyed. It dictates the principle of proportionality for punishment, generally a negative principle. As discussed above, the initial statements of the lex talionis are found in Israel’s legal code but are common throughout all the Jewish literature.

To understand James’ final aphorism, one must first seek to understand the nature of “judgment without mercy” (κρίσις ἀνέλεος). Moo answers that simply: “The reference to ‘judgment’ is clear enough from v. 12: the negative verdict of condemnation that God will pronounce over evildoers in the last days.” Martin is less certain of the...
identification. “Kρίσις, taken in the sense of eternal damnation, gives too stern a threat (unless James is driving home the thought that lack of concern is evidence of unreal faith, thus providing grounds for eschatological punishment). It is doubtful that giving preference to the rich at the expense of the poor is meant to be equal to the sin of apostasy.” While Martin does not like this identification of the judgment, he is in the minority position. Most scholars agree that this does, in fact, warn of the final eschatological judgment. A background in Jesus’ teaching makes it hard to escape this conclusion. James restates here the principle of the judgment of Matthew 18 and 25 as well as of the earlier wisdom teachers: those who fail to enact mercy will also be denied it in due course.

Some disagree to what exactly the “mercy,” or the lack of it, relates. Laws, for example, separates 2:13a from its context and views it as proverbial:

It would be forced to see in the introduction of this new idea of mercy a reference back to the situation of James’s illustration in ii. 2 ff., with mercy as the implied antithesis of discrimination and therefore as the basis for the treatment the poor man should have received. The syntactical change from second person address to third person statement suggests that what is being given is a general principle rather than a specific guide.

concern for the poor and powerless, is Zech. 7:9-10. . . . But more relevant, as usually is the case in James, is the teaching of Jesus. Particularly apropos is the parable about the unmerciful servant (Matt. 18:21-35). But James also, in effect, transforms Jesus’ beatitude—‘Blessed are the merciful, for they will be shown mercy’ (Matt. 5:7)—into its opposite” (117).

Martin, James, 71. He can accept that this refers to eternal damnation only if James’ statement is taken in context of the subsequent discussion of faith and works: “For this moral theologian, works, even acts of charity (2:14-16), provide the evidence that Christian faith is genuine. . . . On the other hand, failure to live out the message in its social ramification implies (for James) a dead faith that is useless for salvation (2:14). The severity of this verse must not then be diminishes. Those who fail to demonstrate a living and consistent faith are in danger of facing harsh judgment at the end, for they live as though ethical issues were of no consequence. Failure to show mercy to others cuts a person off from a true appreciation of the divine compassion (as emphasized in the dominical parable of the debtor servant and its application, Matt 18:21-35). . . . Those who discriminate against the poor are reckoned to be in danger of the same fate as the godless. Such stern warning is reminiscent of Matthew’s special sources (e.g., Matt 13:24-30, 41-42, 47-50; 25:31-46; Reicke, 30)” (71-72)

Wall, Community of the Wise, 128, calls it “God’s eschatological courtroom,” while Richardson, James, 126, adds “Failure to show mercy to those in need calls into question whether there has been any true act of repentance in face of God’s mercy. Instead of liberation, the full force of the law’s condemnation falls against those who break the law.”

Maynard Smith, The Epistle of S. James (Oxford: Blackwell, 1914), 128-29, sees the tie to Jesus’ teaching and warns, “We think at once of the Lord’s Beatitude and the Lord’s Prayer. We remember His warning, ‘With what measure ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again.’ We remember the Parable of the Two Debtors, and may learn from it not only the perils of the unforgiving temper, but also the operation of God’s righteous mercy.”

Laws, The Epistle of James, 117.
While James uses an aphorism to summarize this section, Laws is nearly alone for not seeing a connection with at least 2:1-9 if not also 2:14-26.571 This may be a more general principle that James recycles, but he uses it because of its relevance to this context. Johnson notes “that the scholia on this passage interprets it in terms of almsgiving, as do John Chrysostom, Oecumenius, and Theophlact,” partially because the connection had already been made “in Sirach, [where] the expression ‘show mercy’ (poiein eleos) becomes linked to the sharing of possessions with the poor (Sir 29:1; see also 18:13), thus creating a bridge to the concept of almsgiving.”572 Whether almsgiving is the sole interpretation of James’ warning here or not, there are indications throughout the epistle that concern for the poor features highly in his understanding of what God desires from his people (cf. Jas. 1:27, 5:1-6), indeed such concern marks God’s people (cf. Jas. 2:14-17).573

For those not “doing mercy,” therefore, James warns of κρίσις ἀνέλεος.574 The pattern seen in Jesus’ teaching shows that eschatological judgment and damnation is the merciless outworking of justice declared solely on merciless people. When James warns of “judgment without mercy” for those who have failed to repent and live a life according to

571 She can, unsurprisingly, find support from Dibelius, James, 149. Johnson, James, 236, in contrast, finds that the context illumines the passage: “v.13, which speaks of merciless judgment of the unmerciful and of mercy triumphing over judgment, points forward to the example of ‘mercilessness’ that James will recount immediately in 2:14-16. At the same time, it connects that ‘neglect of the poor’ to the merciless ‘shaming of the poor’ in 2:2-4.” Richardson, James, 126, adds, “What becomes apparent here is the interconnectedness between fairness toward the poor, neighbor love, and the principle of receiving and showing mercy.”

572 Johnson, James, 234. The shared root with ἐλεομοσύνη, “almsgiving,” strengthens the association (cf. Matt. 6:2). It is also hard not to think of the parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus in Luke 16:19-31, with its literal depiction of the damnation of the rich man, which results from his unmerciful treatment of Lazarus. This parallel may indicate that James, and Jesus, are not making a general statement about how all works will fare in the final judgment, but specifically how acts of mercy toward the poor are essential for a positive result.

573 Cf. Sir. 29:11-12.

574 Mußner, Der Jakobusbrief, 126, observes about this verse: “Der Vers macht wegen seiner Begrifflichkeit – von ἔμοι war ja im vorausgehenden keine Rede, seines Inhalts und seiner formalen Struktur den Eindruck einer ziemlich festgeprägten Sentenz. Jak übernimmt sie und stellt sie ad vocem κρίνειθαι neben V 12, wodurch freilich nun der Ausdruck ἔμοι interpretiert wird im Sinn des Liebesgebots: liebe den Nächsten, d.h., sei barmherzig gegen den Armen! So ergibt sich aber auch ein organischer Übergang zum folgenden Text, in dem es ja um das Erbarmen mit den notleidenden Brüdern und Schwestern geht, das den Menschen zu retten’ vermag, nämlich beim Gericht. . . . Eingeführt aber wird V 13 als Begründung (γιὰ). Begründet wird die vorausgehende Gerichtsandrohung mit dem unausgesprochenen Zwischengedanken: man soll das Gericht fürchten; denn es wird unerbarmherzig gegen den Unerbarmherzigen sein (V 13a).”
the principle of neighbor love, it seems intuitive, logical, and yet also surprising.\textsuperscript{575} When in context of justice being enacted by the Judge, judgment is by default \( \text{δικαιοσύνη} \), the opposite side of justice from mercy. Judgment, as condemnation, excludes mercy.

James’ statement in 2:13a, follows logically, then, for he promises an \( \text{δικαιοσύνη} \) judgment to the \( \text{δικαιοσύνη} \), i.e., the ones not doing the law. And this in itself brings with it the justification of the righteous, the merciful, as they watch the wicked brought down in judgment.\textsuperscript{576} Yinger notes that, in the OT, “judgment according to deeds is not dreaded as inimical to but in fact welcomed as leading to the justification of the righteous.”\textsuperscript{577}

Judgment, in James 2:12-13a, comes in two forms: for the righteous, they are judged by the law of freedom by which they have lived and thus they have nothing to fear; for the merciless, they are judged by the law of love by which they have \textit{not} lived and thus they have everything to fear.

iii. Mercy Triumphant: 2:13b

This last short aphorism raises the most complicated questions. First, to whose mercy and whose justice does James refer? Second, does this “boasting” by mercy negate justice? And finally, is mercy then a “work” by which people are saved? As Moo asks, “whose ‘mercy’ is it that triumphs over judgment? Some commentators think that James refers to the mercy of God himself. While setting forth a strict standard, conformity to his

\textsuperscript{575} Wall, \textit{Community of the Wise}, 128, posits that “God’s eschatological courtroom promises a fair trial to every person: the rule of faith is Torah, which clearly and perfectly stipulates God’s will. Since love of one’s neighbor is the rule of God’s coming kingdom, it seems theo-logical [sic] that ‘mercy’ is given by God to those who ‘show mercy’ — that is, who love their (poor) neighbors — while divine ‘judgment’ (\textit{krisis}) is reserved for the one who has been merciless.” Davids, \textit{Epistle of James}, 118-19, meanwhile, warn, “Judgment without mercy would be strict justice, every sin getting its full punishment, a prospect which the Jews feared (cf. Urbach, 448-461, on the rabbinic development of the relationship of God’s attributes of justice and mercy; . . .). The one who does not show mercy would be the person failing to care for any creature or other person (a duty derived from requirement of copying God’s attribute), especially the failure to help the poor.”

\textsuperscript{576} This sounds similar to judgment scenes described in the Epistle of Enoch, there intended as encouragement to remain faithful.

\textsuperscript{577} Yinger, \textit{Paul, Judaism}, 37. This, in context of 1 Kings 8:32 (= 2 Chronicles 6:23), in which “the language of judgment [intersects] with that of justification” in a positive way. Popkes, \textit{Jakobus}, 181, also sees an OT background for the conjunction of mercy and judgment, noting that “Die Wurzel für diese Zusammenstellung liegt im AT; danach stehen Gerechtigkeit, Barmherzigkeit, gerechtes Gericht, Wahrheit und Friede sher wohl miteinander in Einklang; die Verletzung eines Elements beeinträchtigt auch die anderen.”

166
holy law, as the basis of judgment, God is ultimately a God of mercy, who also provides in
his grace a means of escaping that judgment.578 Because of the context, however, Moo
disagrees with this conclusion: “The ‘mercy’ that James has been referring to in this
context is human mercy, not God’s (v. 12). We therefore think it more likely that he is
making a point about the way in which the mercy we show toward others shows our desire
to obey the law of the kingdom and, indirectly therefore, of a heart made right by the work
of God’s grace.”579 His point is valid: contextually James has consistently referred to human
actions throughout chapter two, at least up until verses 12 and 13. At that point, however,
the imminent judgment appears, one that determines the fate of every individual,
presumably executed by God at the eschaton. The context has broadened to open the
possibility of divine mercy.

Others also notes this link between human responsibility and God’s response.
According to Bede, James “says, by acting in this way, you see to it that by loving your
neighbor you deserve to be loved by God; by showing mercy to your neighbor you
become worthy of mercy in the divine judgment.”580 Whether the language of deserving
and worth are the correct terms might be questioned, but thinking in terms of the lex
talionis helps clarify the legal nature of Bede’s statement. Likewise, Hort agrees that the
reader does not need to decide between the two subjects for mercy: “Is it then human or
Divine ἐλεος, the plea of the mercy that has been shewn in life or the Divine mercy
resisting the Divine condemnation? Probably neither without the other: the two mercies
are coupled as in Mt. v. 7, in the Lord’s Prayer, and the Two Debtors.”581 Popkes notes
that:

Der Verzicht auf einen Gen. subjectivus bei ἐλεος (wessen Erbarmen?) könnte
beabsichtigt sein; beides ist impliziert: Das menschliche Erbarmen findet
Respons beim Erbarmen Gottes. V. 13b ist dann positiver Gegen-Satz zur

578 Moo, James, 118.
579 Ibid.
580 Bede, Commentary, 25.
581 Hort, Epistle of St James, 57.
The reason, according to Jesus as interpreted by James, that God’s mercy triumphs in the judgment is specifically due to his response to human mercy, the triumph of God’s character within humanity itself.\(^583\) James’ emphasis is primarily on human mercy as contrasted with divine judgment in this saying: the human ἐλεοσ, in contrast with the human ἄνελεοσ, succeeds in averting a negative judgment and invoke a response of ἐλεοσ from God. This does not make God unjust. Rather, because God is just, when his people live in accordance with his character, then in his justice God responds to his people with mercy, not judgment.

This leads into the second question, namely the use of “boasting” in this context. The only other time κατακαυχόμαι appears in James (3:14), it is an arrogant boast, done in pride and willful insubordination. That meaning does not appear dominant here. Here, it is the quality of mercy—not human pride—that “triumphs over” the negative “judgment.” Within the wisdom opposition of mercy and judgment, in justice mercy ought to triumph over judgment for those “doing mercy.” On the one hand, Dryness points out “This then is how mercy triumphs, not just in showing impartiality, but in a loving hospitality and welcome for those in need.”\(^584\) From the perspective of divine mercy,

---

582 Popkes, Jakobus, 182.
583 Laws, The Epistle of James, 117-18, puts forth both sides of the argument: “Judgment and mercy could be seen here as two attributes of God: God, the author of judgment in 13a, delights in a situation where his mercy may over-ride his judgment. Where a man has shown no mercy, God’s judgment of him is inexorable, but where there is evidence of merciful deeds, God’s attribute of mercy triumphs over the dictates of his justice, and the balance is tipped in man’s favour. . . . More probably, though, the focus is on man’s rather than God’s mercy. The merciless man may expect merciless judgment; a man, however, who has shown mercy may stand before judgment with confidence. . . . James would apparently have no difficulty with the notion that man may boast before God, his judge; or that man’s mercy may be made a meritorious work that boasts a claim on God’s approval (contrast Rom. iv. 2-4). His aphorism could be said, though, to be not only independent of but logically inconsistent with the argument of ii. 10: there the law must be kept in full or there is liability for the whole; here the consideration of mercy may apparently serve to waive judgment.” What she fails to consider in this conclusion is that, for James, acting mercifully is evidence of the fulfillment of the law of freedom, thus it is not simply a “get out of jail free” card but reveals a disposition of obedience to God’s will.
however, Neusner comments that “mercy completes the principle of justice,” and that without the two together, “God would execute justice but not mercy, and, from sages’ perspective, the world would fall out of balance.” These two perspectives give the opposing but balancing sides of the equation.

Human mercy “triumphs” over the precise justice of the impartial court advocated in 2:1-4 because the practice of ἐλεος, ἔλημ, fulfills the covenant requirement and defines one as righteous. Divine mercy likewise triumphs in that, to those who have shown mercy, it rewards them for their mercy rather than punishing them for their sins, weighing the human mercy favorably at the time of the final judgment. To those who show mercy, at the judgment their mercy invokes the divine mercy and one or both together are depicted as “triumphing over” the strict judgment that would be expected. Even more, in a picture worthy of an apocalyptic text, Mercy “boasts” together with the righteous as justice is enacted. As the injustices of the world are put to right in God’s final justice, Mercy sees the vindication of the righteous, the merciful. This is not a mockery of justice, but instead the fulfillment of justice. Mercy can boast because she witnesses the judgment of the wicked and the protection of the merciful within herself.

585 Neusner, “Sin, Repentance, Atonement,” 416. Grundmann, “Teacher of Righteousness,” 96, notes that “In the Hymns of Thanksgiving man’s justice and God’s mercy are directly linked.” 586 D. Edmond Heibert, The Epistle of James: Tests of a Living Faith (Chicago: Moody, 1979), 172, fails to understand the legal aspect of mercy as the opposite of judgment. “Mercy does not triumph at the expense of justice; the triumph of mercy is based on the atonement wrought at Calvary.” In this he is supported by Kistemaker, Epistle of James, 86: “Mercy is never earned but it is always granted when it is sought. If we were able to earn it, mercy would no longer be mercy. We must look to the One who grants it to us. . . . The Christian knows that in the judgment day, mercy triumphs over justice because of Christ’s meritorious work.” James nowhere denies the efficacy of Christ’s death and resurrection, much less God’s grace as emphasized in James 1, but here he emphasizes the covenantal requirements of mercy as part of God’s character as the Just.

587 Smith, S. James, 131, pictures a scene of judgment in which the King provides mercy “on account of facts which the law did not contemplate, and for which perhaps it was impossible to provide. Mercy, then, in S. James’s phrase, triumphs over judgment—a legal judgment; but it does not necessarily triumph over justice. The judgment may be in accordance with the law, while justice clamours for mercy.” 588 It is possible that, in Jas. 2:13b, “Mercy” becomes personified, an occurrence not surprising in this epistle for the tendency toward personification appeared as early in 1:4 with “perseverance” (ὑπομονή) which was to finish its perfect work and to various degrees throughout the rest of the epistle (Sin and Death in 1:14-15; the Word in 1:22; the Law which “judges” in 2:12; Wisdom in 3:13-17; etc).
Ultimately, then, human actions of mercy appear necessary to a favorable declaration in justice. As 2:14-26 will make quite clear, good intentions do not suffice and a faith that does not act hospitably and charitably fails to save. This continuation of the theme of mercy makes the contrasting statements of 2:13 even more critical. Mercy must, it appears, be enacted in order to be efficacious. And thus the answer to the third question regarding this proverbial statement appears to be “yes,” mercy is a “work” required for salvation. But that is a misleading way to understand James. It is better perhaps to call the mercy that triumphs an appropriation of the divine concern (2:5, 8), proof of the reality of the “birth” (1:18) and the “implanted word” (1:21), and an accurate understanding of “faith” (2:14). This question of what constitutes “good works” will be explored next, but the thrust of James 2:12-13 has been that the audience must “speak and act” in a manner that will bring them into the mercy of God at the final judgment, and therefore speech and actions are the essential criterion with which James is concerned here.

Since James writes to a community of fellow Christians, he might well agree with Sanders’ statement that “good deeds are the condition of remaining ‘in,’ but they do not earn salvation.” According to James, however, one absolutely essential element for “remaining ‘in,’” i.e., experiencing a positive outcome at the final judgment, is acting in a merciful manner. But to speak of it simply as “deeds” fails to appropriate the transformative power of the “implanted word” from 1:21, τὸν δυνάμενον σῴζαι τὰς ψυχὰς ὑμῶν. If, as was argued earlier, the νόμος and λόγος are at the least closely tied, the one who has appropriately received and obeyed the word will have developed the very character of the νόμον τέλειον τὸν τῆς ἐλευθερίας and need fear nothing. It is character, not mere “works,” that James seeks to transform.

589 Sanders, *Paul and Judaism*, 517.
3. The Faith that Works: James 2:14-26

This passage follows immediately on the crucial judgment passage and brings it to life. Although it is a fundamental passage for understanding James, historically too much weight has been given it in relation to verses 12-13, for it expands upon James’ prior statements.\(^{590}\) Regarding the relationship of “faith” and “works,” of course, this passage is central. Out of the epistle, these verses contain eleven of the 16 uses of πίστις and all three of the verb πιστεύω. Likewise it has twelve of the 15 uses of ἔργον and the single, loaded use of συνεργέω.\(^{591}\) The questions of the proper types of works, of whether faith can exist alone, and how these relate to final salvation will all be explored. The immediate transition into the question of whether a faith without works “can save” implies that an eschatological perspective is still in place. Yet again, as with 2:12-13, eschatology impinges on the current behavior.

a. The Argument for a Faith with Works: James 2:14-19

The primary question of this section relates to work-less faith, of which James asks: μὴ δύναται ἡ πίστις σῶσαι αὐτὸν?\(^{592}\) This rhetorical question sets up the passage,\(^{593}\) clarifying James’ position that a faith lacking ἔργα (pl) is insufficient for salvation. Johnson warns modern readers:

Is it really plausible that James could find it necessary to remind Jewish Christians of the first generation on such a fundamental point as this? . . . The answer to the first question is straightforwardly, “Yes, messianic Jews in the first generation could need such reminders.” The assumption that first-century Jews, either in Palestine or in the Diaspora, were all Pharisaic in their devotion to Torah is a distortion caused by reading earlier realities through the lense of a later normative Judaism. Judaism in the first century was widely diverse, and “Jewish Christianity” was also in all likelihood a diverse phenomenon.\(^{594}\)

---

\(^{590}\) Contra, e.g., Dibelius, James, 149.

\(^{591}\) However it has neither of the appearances of ἔργαζομαι (1:20; 2:9) nor the one use of κατεργάζομαι (1:3), all discussed above.

\(^{592}\) The claim to faith (ἐὰν πίστιν λέγη τις ἐχει) is reminiscent to the claim of being religious in 1:26 (ἐὰν τις δοκεῖ ὑπηρετών ἔχειν): both are misguided and shown be false by the failure in how the person acts.


\(^{594}\) Johnson, James, 249.
He warns against an oversimplification that assumes the only proponent of such views could have been Paul and opens the way for allowing this passage to speak to the culture more broadly. Returning to terminology briefly, $σωζω$ is the only “salvation” term used in James and occurs five times, the first three reasonably unambiguously referring to salvation at the time of final judgment (1:21; 2:14; 4:12).595 This use in particular follows the warning of 2:13 and the dichotomy of the merciful/unmerciful judgment. While James is concerned by the thought of final salvation, his apprehension here, following after 2:12-13, could readily be re-worded as “could such workless faith warrant a merciful judgment?” As we will see later, because God is the Judge who “is able to save or destroy” at the time that he enacts his justice (4:12), James focuses on God’s justice and how one attains to a merciful verdict in the eschaton—and when he uses $σωζω$ in an eschatological way, this is his referent.

James immediately provides examples to support his proposition. While common examples, James highlights two of the tasks that Jesus depicted in Matthew 25: feeding the hungry and clothing the naked. With these most basic of human needs James pictures an ἀδελφός ἢ ἀδελφή, putting this one within the community of believers and thus raising the stakes. If the person had been a stranger, perhaps some in the audience could have complained of the impossibility of caring for every needy person, but James preempts this protest. James gives what seems an almost ludacris scenario, in which the better-off believer, faced with desperate physical needs, “blesses” the poorer one, wishing them well with the nearly mocking words $θερμαίνεσθε καὶ χορτάζεσθε$.596 Laws suggests that this is “reverential periphrasis: the hope is not simply that somehow or other these wants will

---

595 The other two are in 5:15, 20. The irony that a thesis on soteriology has, thus far, minimized the importance of the $σωζω$ word group is not lost. James, however, places far more interest in judgment and mercy language than that of “salvation.”

596 These verbs could be in the middle voice, which would make the mockery more in the forefront, saying, “Go, warm yourself and feed yourself,” cf. Heibert, *Epistle of James*, 180. The passive, however, is equally useless, since there is no indication of how the person would receive the aid to be warmed and fed, since the fellow believers fail to help. Martin, *James*, 85, while supporting the middle voice interpretation, emphasizes that “either voice points to the fact that some professed believers are failing to meet the needs of other church members.”
be supplied, but that God will supply them.” This attitude fails, however, to take into account that it is through his people that God supplies for the needy (e.g., Lev 19:10; Deut 15:7, 11). To such a theologically correct and realistically useless sentiment, James reiterates, τί το οφελος. A “faith” that expresses the right sentiments but fails to clothe the naked is of no use. He is willing to call it “faith” (2:14), but it fails to win salvation. For this reason, Johnson ties together several themes, arguing for “a moral framework” for this section, wherein James’ “opening illustration provides the perfect negative example. . . . Here indeed is a case of false religion as defined by James 1:26-27, combining self-indulgence, careless use of speech, and a refusal to visit orphans and widows. It is, therefore, not ‘unstained by the world’ and not ‘pure and undefiled before God.’

James 2:17, then, summarizes the argument, concluding the first round of argumentation (οὕτως) and pointing toward the next (νεκρά, inclusio with v. 26). While he is willing to concede the use of πίστις for this workless belief, he sees absolutely no point to it. Faith, with nothing to support it, proves useless for helping in the judgment: failure to feed and clothe the needy person is a failure at “mercy” (2:13), and a faith that does not lead to these actions does not “profit” one in the judgment. Instead, James emphasizes the importance of works for faith, highlighted by the inclusio from 2:14 and 17: ἔργα δὲ μὴ ἔχῃ and ἔὰν μὴ ἔχῃ ἔργα, and the double use of τί το οφελος in 14 and 16. Having twice emphasized this “faith’s” lack of works, declared its uselessness for

597 Laws, The Epistle of James, 121. She adds this “is probably intended as a caricature of what to his supposed man of faith would seem a wholly appropriate response. Confronted with a case of need, he commits it with prayer to God, who clothes the naked and feeds the hungry . . . and sends away his fellow-believers with expressions of confidence.”
598 Proctor, “Faith, Works,” 307, observes, “James argues throughout his letter that the Christian faith should express itself through charitable acts of hospitality. . . . For James, the Christian lifestyle should be one that aims at ameliorating social pain and marginality: to be holy is to be hospitable, to be pious is to be pragmatic.”
599 Contra the examples given in Matthew of faith acting at all costs.
600 Johnson, James, 247.
601 See Lewis, “Investigation of James 2:14-26,” who argues for a possible (if wrong-headed) separation between “faith” and “works” terminology in James; also Lewis, “A New Perspective.”
salvation, and proclaimed its sheer lifelessness, the central illustration of helping the poor crucially sets up that the most important works for James are acts of charity:

“Works” here are not the Pauline works of the law, such as circumcision, but rather the works of love, such as caring for those who are in need, not showing favoritism, being humble, or being slow to speak. In essence, works are the sum total of a changed life brought about by faith. . . . James emphasizes the absolute necessity of post-conversion works.603

In suit with the other wisdom authors, James shapes the character of his audience, not the ritual of their religion.604 Without evidence of kingdom ethics developing naturally from their faith, James questions the very existence of faith. As Heide explains:

Faith and works do not necessarily have to be diametrically opposed to one another. It seems to fit James’ understanding best to find faith as the purchasing agent of salvation, but not if it is only a statement of creed and not a way of life. Works are the natural expression of that faith. They are not a condition for faith and salvation, but rather an exemplification of it.605

James presents a picture wherein faith and works are inextricably intertwined, as a transformation into the character of God. He is unconcerned by works done apart from faith nor does he argue that ethics exist independent from faith.606 As Fung remarks, “in denying that a work-less faith can save, James does not thereby raise the question whether,

---

602 McCartney, James, 157, notes the fittingness of the example: “the faith-deed of provision for a fellow believer’s hunger or nakedness is a particularly apt example, not only because it emphasizes the necessity of love of neighbor in the church, but also because the needy person receives no benefit from nice words, just as the professing Christian receives no benefit from inactive faith. And there is an echo here of Jesus’s words in matt. 25:31-46. . . . Its inaction is a mute but powerful testimony to its deadness, and shows itself to be a false faith by the way it responds to the needy brother.”

603 Blomberg and Kamell, James, 132. Cf. also Davids, James, 119; Moo, James, 100-101. This interpretation is set up both by the thesis statement of 1:27 but also the contexts of 2:1-4 and 2:12-13.

604 Ropes, Epistle of St. James, 30-31, concedes, “Good works (there is no hint that among these he includes ritual or Pharisaic acts of piety, but, on the other hand, no clear indication that he consciously rejects them) are necessary to please God (P2, 25 212,14,25 313). A living faith can be recognized by the good works of the believer (210). It does not exist where there are no accompanying works.” Stein, “‘Saved by faith’,” 13, however, also points to the centrality of Christ for James: “When James refers to ‘works,’ he is clearly not referring to ‘works of the law.’ He is also not referring to deeds of mercy and love isolated from faith. The works that he refers to are always associated with faith in the Lord Jesus Christ (2:1). Thus ‘by works’ in 2:21-22 should be understood” as Gal 5:6.


606 T. Lorenzen, “Faith without Works does not count before God! James 2:14-26,” ExpTim 89 (1978), 231, observes: “His question is not whether works apart from faith can save, but whether faith apart from works can. . . . Repeating the phrase ‘what does it profit’ from v.14 indicates that the perspective is soteriological (how can I stand before God?), not merely ethical (how must I act in the world?). Neglecting the demands of the situation, or artificially relativizing such demands has consequences for one’s salvation.”
let alone imply that, faith-less works can."607 His argument focuses on the merciful character of a faith that saves, not whether works alone can save.

In 2:18, James uses an interlocutor to argue for the separable nature of faith and works. While verses 18-19 are fraught with punctuation difficulties,608 James’ point remains clear: the impossibility of demonstrating faith “without deeds” (χωρίς τῶν ἔργων) when it is readily shown “by deeds” (ἐκ τῶν ἔργων). Faith and works, James argues, belong together, for faith is inexpressible without its fruit. At this point the only works discussed in the epistle should be highlighted: James is concerned that his audience do works of mercy combined with a character of moral purity and a controlled tongue.

Πιστεύω appears twice in James 2:19 to indicate a content based belief, an affirmation of a creedal point. While the statement καλῶς ποιεῖς is not entirely sarcastic, for indeed the belief that “God is one” cornerstones the Jewish religion,609 James remains unimpressed with mere orthodoxy.610 As Davids notes, “such belief is indeed necessary, but not enough for salvation”611 for, as James notes that “even the demons believe!”612 In a parallel made evident by James’ subsequent use of Rahab, the people of Jericho “knew of

608 The discussion regarding where the quotation begins and ends remains conflicted. The meaning is apparent: faith and works belong together, a faith without works is unprovable. See Heinz Neitzel, “Eine alte crux interpretum im Jakobusbrief 2, 18,” ZNW 73 (1982), 286-93; Scot McKnight, “James 2:18a: The Unidentifiable Interlocutor,” WTJ 52 (1990), 355-64; more recently, Cargal, Restoring the Diaspora, 125-26; Edgar, Has God Not, 170-71. It pushes far beyond the evidence available, however, to argue as Vasiliki Limberis, “The Provenance of the Caliphite Church: James 2.17-26 and Galatians 3 Reconsidered,” in Reading James with New Eyes: Methodological Reassessments of the Letter of James, ed. Robert L. Webb and John S. Kloppenborg (London: T&T Clark, 1997), 414, that “James is counting on his readers’/listeners’ ability to make the easy identification of τίς with Paul.”
609 See the parallel phrasing in the other letter purportedly composed by James in Acts 15:29: ἐν πρὸς ἐμέ.
610 In this, James D. G. Dunn, Unity and Diversity in the New Testament (London: SCM, 1977), 239, reveals James’ continuity with Judaism: “In short, it is evident that the earliest community in no sense felt themselves to be a new religion, distinct from Judaism. There was no sense of a boundary line drawn between themselves and their fellow Jews. They saw themselves simply as a fulfilled Judaism, the beginning of eschatological Israel. And the Jewish authorities evidently did not see them as anything very different from themselves: they held one or two eccentric beliefs (so did other Jewish sects), but otherwise they were wholly Jewish. Indeed we may put the point more strongly: since Judaism has always been concerned more with orthopraxy than with orthodoxy (right practice rather than right belief) the earliest Christians were not simply Jews, but in fact continued to be quite ‘orthodox’ Jews.”
611 Davids, James, 125.
612 Lorenzen, “Faith without Works,” 232, pushes too far, however, when he argues: “Thus faith without works is not only dead and futile, it is also demonic!” James does not say their faith itself is demonic, he merely notes the futility of sheer orthodoxy.
and feared the LORD” (Josh. 2:11), but their knowledge, no matter how theologically correct, did not save them.\(^613\) Like the demons in James 2:19, the LXX reveals that the residents of Jericho recognized YHWH and trembled in fear, but Rahab showed her faith ἐκ τῶν ἐργῶν and was saved. Orthodox belief, while a good thing, is meaningless if it does not produce ethical actions. Such belief fails to grasp and implications of the identity of the one in whom faith is stated.

b. The Exemplars of This Faith: James 2:20-26

At this point, James transitions his argument yet again, this time marshalling examples from the Scriptures (cf. parallel example lists in Sir. 44-50; Wisd. 10; 1 Macc. 2:51-62; 4 Ezra 7:106-111; Heb. 11). He introduces this new section by calling his opponent a “fool” (κενός), the traditional opposite of the wise person who lives by the fear of the Lord.\(^614\) Echoing 2:14 and 17 again, James then introduces a wordplay on works, offering to prove that faith “without works” (χωρίς τῶν ἐργῶν) does not work (ἀργην).\(^615\) This term only appears eight times in the NT, every other time referring to a state of idleness that is condemnable.\(^616\) A faith without works is an inoperative faith that does not bring about the intended result of faith: salvation.\(^617\) Its very idleness condemns it.


\(^614\) Dan McCartney, “The Wisdom of James the Just,” SBJT 4 (2000), 56, also identifies James’ pragmatic wisdom focus, a focus that means one who does not believe faith necessitates works cannot be called wise: “For James, wisdom is essentially an ethical quality. . . . In particular, the wisdom of James focuses on two ethical issues: speech ethics and humility.” Also, “James does not seem so much concerned with the intellectual search for wisdom as with moral action befitting true wisdom” (54).

\(^615\) In this case a note of the textual variant is worthwhile, since the variant νεκρός is clearly a harmonization with 2:17 and 26. The use of ἀργήν, however, exemplifies the sort of catchword play in which James so often engages.

\(^616\) Cf. Matt. 12:36; 20:3, 6; 1 Tim. 5:13; Titus 1:12; 2 Pet. 1:8.

\(^617\) Or, as in Matthew, healing and restoration. Fung, “‘Justification’,” 152, observes “The word translated ‘barren’ (also RV, NEB; Gk ἀργος—literally ‘workless’, ‘not at work’ (Mt. 20:3. 6)—means in this context (cf. 14) ‘unproductive of the blessings of salvation’. The verse thus restates the point of the whole section in the form of an effective world-play: ‘faith’ that has no works does not work—it is dead (17) and does not save (14).”
James pairs Abraham with Rahab as his two examples. “Abraham and Rahab stand as far apart from each other on the social scale as is possible: the one a wealthy, respectable male and founder of the Israelite nation; the other a poor, disreputable, Gentile female.”\footnote{Kamell, “Defining Faith,” 429. Placing Hebrews and James in parallel, the article continues: “In terms of style, Hebrews and James are among the most Jewish books of the New Testament and so Abraham’s appearance as a model of faith, while enlightening, is not necessarily surprising. On the other hand, for these two epistles both to include this Gentile woman as a paradigm of faith is noteworthy.” James furthers the moral distance between Abraham and Rahab by calling her a prostitute (ἡ πόρνη), a status not indicated in Josh 2.} This span, perhaps, was intentional to reveal that this principle of faith accompanied by works applies to every person. Wachob concludes that James “concretizes πίστις in two ‘historical examples’ (παραδείγματα) that recall the ‘works of mercy’ of Abraham and Rahab.”\footnote{Wachob, Voice of Jesus, 84. While agreeing that mercy is an essential theme in James, I think Wachob overstates his case and reads into the evidence available, cf. pp. 109-111.} While James was most likely aware of Abraham’s acts of hospitality, those are not the incidents to which he alludes. It is fair to say that both characters were models of mercy, but we must also be careful not to ignore the illustration that James chooses to give. Both characters are εἰς ἑργαν ἔδικαίωθη, an expression fraught with theological danger for the Protestant interpreter. This passage has the only three uses of δικαιώσω in the epistle, each time used to show how the person was justified only in relation to their works.

What is this justification, however, and when does it occur?\footnote{Stein, “‘Saved by faith’”, 13, answers simply “Paul refers to the initial, proleptic pronouncement of God’s judicial verdict upon faith. James is referring to the verdict in the final day when a person stands before God.”} Davids observes that “the community ancestors Abraham (also known in Jewish tradition for his great care for the poor) and Rahab (the archetypal proselyte) were proclaimed righteous after they had acted on their faith, not before.”\footnote{Peter H. Davids, “James’s Message: The Literary Record,” in The Brother of Jesus: James the Just and His Mission, ed. Bruce Chilton and Jacob Neusner (Louisville: WJK, 2001), 83. Martin, James, 91-92, argues for “a mainly demonstrative sense” for δικαιώσω, noting that “this line of interpretation takes up the Jewish understanding of ‘justification’ because righteousness is there seen as the covenant fidelity or obedience expected of those who are to survive the judgment.” Proctor, “Faith, Works,” 331, concurs, saying that James “uses this verb to speak about the future eschatological judgment in which God will recognize the fact of an existing righteousness,” even as he claims that “James is not concerned with soteriological issues.”} James’ statement in 2:24 clearly sets the timeline as deeds followed by justification, a series that can thus be witnessed. Lexically, δικαιώσω is a

\[\text{James's statement in 2:24 clearly sets the timeline as deeds followed by justification, a series that can thus be witnessed. Lexically, \text{δικαιώσω is a} \]
key term in James 2:21, 24, and 25, for here is where the apparent contradiction with Paul becomes most concentrated. Martin warns, “If James’ use of δικαιοῦν . . . here were the same as that of Paul, then we would be forced to agree that James does indeed contradict Paul on the issue of the means of justification.”622 Thus this term becomes a crux for the issue of James’ relation with Paul. While that is not the dominant concern of this thesis, nevertheless this term warrants a closer examination.

**Δικαιόω** appears thirty-nine times in the NT, three times in James, but fifteen in Romans and eight in Galatians, showing the strong preference Paul had for the term in those texts. The three uses in James, so close together, pose the difficulty either of contradicting Pauline usage by pronouncing justification by or through works or assuming a less common NT usage of “demonstrating x right.”623 Looking to our other NT text, the two uses in Matthew 11:19 (καὶ ἐδικαίωθη ἡ σοφία ἀπὸ τῶν ἔργων αὐτῆς) and 12:37 (ἐκ γὰρ τῶν λόγων σου δικαίωθησαί, καὶ ἐκ τῶν λόγων σου καταδικασθήσῃ) reveal a mixed use of the verb. In the former wisdom is revealed to be right, while in the latter refers to future judgment.624

Laws is among those who see a rift between James and Paul, arguing that “Paul could surely never have tolerated James’s explicit assertion that justification is not by faith alone nor his lack of attention to an initial saving act of God that makes faith and consequent good works possible.”625 It has already been argued in this thesis that James does assume an initial saving act of God and that this theology then undergirds his moral

---

623 Laws, *James*, 130, notes that “the idea of justification is an important one in Old Testament and subsequent Jewish thought,” and that it began in a “forensic context” wherein “justification referred to the judge’s verdict on the individual before him, who is acquitted or pronounced ‘in the right’ on the basis of his proven innocence.”
624 The noun δικαιοσύνη, which is in James 1:20, 2:23, and 3:18, thus also relates to this discussion. It appears seven times in Matthew, four in the Sermon on the Mount alone, but thirty-four times in Romans and only four in Galatians. Moo, *James*, 134, observes that Matthew follows typical Jewish uses of these terms where “righteousness” is mainly, if not exclusively, the conduct expected of the disciple (Matt. 5:20) and ‘justify’ refers to the verdict pronounced over a person’s life at the last judgment, a verdict based on what a person has done.”
instruction. Thus this particular description of the "basic lack of sympathy" between James and Paul may be an overstatement of the situation. Two scholars assume a declarative sense for the verb, whereby the deeds of Abraham demonstrate his righteousness and this state is then declared over him. Lorenzen argues that James presents the salvific use of Abraham’s sacrifice, wherein “Abraham’s willingness to offer up his son as a sacrifice to God (Gn 22:1-14) is seen in v. 21 as a good deed which God recognizes by granting him the status of salvation.” In this he is very like Dibelius, who urges that “God found [Abraham] faithful and (as a reward) ‘attributed righteousness’ to him.” Thus for Lorenzen and Dibelius, the the good deeds are seen and recognized and then rewarded, a more traditional but non-Pauline legal use.

Moo offers a more difficult challenge that “the overall thrust of this passage, established by the broader context, . . . the issue is what constitutes the ‘true religion’ that will survive the judgment of God (1:21-27, 2:12-13) and by the specific question raised in v. 14: with ‘that kind of faith’ save a person?” Because of the importance of context in this thesis, his objection is important. He misses, however, that, while the text is concerned with surviving the judgment, this passage argues that survival rests on faith that is demonstrable now. Mercy at the time of judgment is gained by having shown mercy. James nowhere else describes righteousness as being ascribed on top of a person’s deeds, but that a person attains mercy on account of one’s deeds. Though Moo argues that “James is asserting that Abraham was granted a positive verdict in the judgment by God on the

---

626 Ibid. She has already acknowledged that whereas Paul references works of the Law, James’ “understanding of works is most naturally seen in terms of the deeds of charity demanded in v. 15 f.” (129).
628 Dibelius, James, 162.
629 Moo, James, 135.
basis of his pious acts," the closer context of the co-temporal participle ὀνειρεύομαι and the subsequent discussion of faith “working together with works” and “being completed” indicate a continuing process, not necessarily a final salvific declaration—even while acknowledging the larger argument that demonstrable faith saves.

Martin finds no contradiction between James and Paul on this issue, “for in vv 21-24 Abraham’s works (which may recall the thought of testings, πειρασμοί, 1:2, 12; see Davids, 127) are the evidence that God declares Abraham as ‘righteous,’ i.e., faithful (1 Macc 2:52). This suggests that a mainly demonstrative sense lies behind δικαιοῦν.”  With Martin, more scholars now argue that δικαιούω here follows on the demonstrative language emphasized in 2:18 and following. For instance, Johnson notes that “The hardest term to translate here is dikaioun, primarily because of its frequent use by Paul in context opposing righteousness by faith and ‘works of the law.’ . . . The precise meaning in each case must be determined by context, not some general theological concept. Given the previous statement demanding the demonstration of faith, the translation here as ‘shown to be righteous’ seems appropriate.” Likewise, Fung argues, “We are bound to conclude

630 Ibid.
631 Martin, James, 91. He continues, “Such an understanding stresses that works are the only means of demonstrating one’s righteous standing (Moo, 109). This use has lexical support (Gen 44:16; Luke 7:29-35 . . . ). . . . The nub of his response to the objection in vv 18-19 is that no such tearing apart of faith and works is possible and that the only faith that justifies is faith-united-with-works as a single unity.” McCartney, James, 164, adds, “On this view, therefore, James’s justification by works (a manifestation of righteousness by obedience) is seen to be something completely different from the justification by works that Paul rejects (a verdict of God’s acquittal based on conformity to law). For James, ‘justify’ is a synonym not for ‘save’ (cf. 2:14) but for ‘show’ or ‘prove’ (2:18).” See his greater discussion on this term in pp. 162-71.
632 He lists “Rom 2:13; 3:4, 20, 24, 26, 28, 30; 4:2, 5; 5:1, 9; 8:30, 33; Gal 2:16-17; 3:8, 11, 24.” He also notes “the complex use of the verb and its cognates in the OT (e.g., LXX Gen 38:26; Exod 23:7; Deut 25:1; Pss 50:6; 81:3; 142:2; Sir 1:22).”
633 Johnson, James, 242. He continues, “The phrase εἰς ἔργα (literally, ‘out of works’) has the sense of ‘on the basis of deeds,’ meaning that the deeds make his righteousness manifest. At first glance, the sentence appears flatly to contradict Paul’s argument concerning the righteousness of Abraham on the basis of faith rather than works (Gal 2:16; 5:6; 3:24; Rom 4:2), until we remember that in Paul’s case, the contrast is with ‘works of the law’ (including circumcision), whereas in James it is with a πίστις αργή (ineffectual faith).” He later summarizes, “James’ own understanding of genuine (‘perfect’) faith is revealed in the examples he cites from Torah. Both Abraham and Rahab had faith that was demonstrated by their actions. The example of Abraham is much more elaborated. James’ choice of the ‘testing of Abraham’ (in God’s call to sacrifice his son Isaac) is particularly appropriate, for that act of fidelity by Abraham serves precisely to make James’ point: the Akedah was not a replacement of faith by deeds but was itself a deed worked by faith. . . . It is in this light that the present translation renders the Greek as ‘shown to be righteous’ (2:21, 24), for the entire line of argument
therefore that *dikaiοε* in v. 21 is probably to be taken in a demonstrative rather than its more technical, declarative sense. This declarative sense does not deny a further ruling at the judgment, but the focus of the text in these verses is on demonstrable faith (“show me”) that reveals friendship with God (not the world) and ultimately leads to a merciful judgment.

Removing the Pauline lens from δικαίον, it seems best to render it here as simply “shown to be righteous,” faithfulness demonstrated. Davids argues for such a separation, concluding, “The point of James’s argument, then, has nothing to do with a forensic declaration of justification; the argument is simply that Abraham did have faith . . . but he also had deeds flowing from that faith.” The reverse is also true: without the demonstration they would not have been considered ἐδικαίωθι. Glaze suggests, “James dealt with an experience of Abraham long after God had declared him righteous because of his faith. He was showing, therefore, not that Abraham gained a right relationship with God through works, but that his willingness to express his faith through obedience justified his claim to faith.” One cannot claim faith unless such a claim can be justified by how one lives when tested or when faced with other’s needs.

---

635 Davids, *James*, 127, explains in depth: “But what does ἐξ ἐργῶν ἐδικαίωθι mean? Here it is certainly correct to bracket Paul’s definitions and first of all search for answers in the Abrahamic tradition. The works are plural, which could indicate simply the class of actions leading to being declared δίκαιος, but which in the case of Abraham may well refer to his 10 testings, especially since testing (πείρασμα) is of such interest to James. In fact, the incident of the binding of Isaac (Aquedah) which James cites forms in Jewish tradition the capstone of a series of tests . . . and the fact that Isaac is bound and then released is seen as evidence not only of Abraham’s obedience to God, but also of the value of his previous acts of mercy, of charity. . . . . . These data mean that neither the works which James cites nor the justification which results are related to Paul. Rather, the works are deeds of mercy (which therefore fit with the opening verses of this section) and the ἐδικαίωθι refers not to a forensic act in which a sinner is declared acquitted (as in Paul), but to a declaration by God that a person is righteous, ἰδικιός (which is the implication of the ‘Now I know’ formula of Gn. 22:12; cf. Is. 5:23. . . ). Adamson is correct in seeing that a moral rather than a primarily judicial emphasis is intended. . . . His faith was not just ‘saying,’ but ‘saying and doing.’”
With the 'Aqedah, James argues that Abraham’s “faith worked together with his works (ἡ πίστις συνηγγείως τούς ἐργαῖς)” and that “by his works, his faith was made complete/perfected (ἐκ τῶν ἐργῶν ἡ πίστις ἐτελειώθη).” This sentence first gives us the word play between συνηγγείως and ἐργα, which in both phrases, “faith” is the subject and works add the substance. The two are shown in a cooperative process, together bringing a person to sanctification and salvation, and works are the means whereby faith moves to a state of perfection and completion so desired by James (cf. 1:4; 2:8; 3:2).637

Mußner argues for the priority of faith:

Jak sagt auch nicht—auch dies ist besonders zu beachten—: Die Werke wirken mit dem Glauben zusammen, sondern umgekehrt: Der Glaube wirkt mit den Werken zusammen, d. h., das Primäre ist auch für ihn der Glaube. Eine Alternative Glaube oder Werke ist für Jak undenkbar.638

Stein agrees:

This is not an equal parallelism. . . . James clearly sees faith as primary. Works do not produce faith. James never entertains the idea that works can exist independently of faith. Earlier in 1:22 James gives the command to be doers of the word (cf. ‘works’) and not hearers only (cf. ‘faith’). No thought is given to the possibility that one can be a ‘doer’ but not a ‘hearer.’639

Faith has the priority for James. Just as he does not argue for the salvific value of works without faith, neither does he argue that works worked with or were completed by faith (e.g., τὰ ἐργα, nom., with τὴν πίστιν, acc.). Moreover, as Lodge notes, this places the emphasis on “was perfected,” such that “instead of faith and works as two subjects acting upon one another, faith acts (συνηγγείως) and receives its wholeness or completion through works.”640 Likewise the expression ἐκ τῶν ἐργῶν ἡ πίστις ἐτελειώθη reminds the reader of the statement in 1:4, wherein endurance is to have its ἐργον τέλειον so that they might be τέλειοι. As McCartney summarizes, “works do not make faith flawless;

637 Fung, “‘Justification’,” 154, observes “In the second half of v. 22, the verb (ἐτελειώθη) is better rendered ‘perfected’ (NASB) or ‘made perfect’ (AV, RV) than ‘completed’ (RSV) or ‘made complete’: in 1:15 James has spoken of sin as ‘full grown’ (ἀπότελεσθαι) when transformed into act and habit and in 1:4 of perseverance being made perfect by exercise. Here he speaks of faith being made perfect by works.”
638 Mußner, Der Jakobusbrief, 142.
639 Stein, “‘Saved by faith’,” 14.
they bring faith to its proper completion.” Or, as Hort words it, “The works received the co-operation of a living power from the faith: the faith received perfecting and consummation from the works into which it grew.” Works, notably works of mercy, bring faith into its completion, its maturity and wholeness that is the goal of wisdom.

Fung sees common ground between James and Paul in their use of Abraham:

‘James quotes Gn. 15:6 for the same purpose as Paul does – to show that it was faith that secured Abraham’s acceptance.’ In other words, this is the place, and the only place in the epistle, where Abraham’s justification before God is mentioned; on this matter ‘for James, no less than for Paul, the words of Gen. 15:6 . . . are decisive. It was by his faith that Abraham was justified.’

In his actions, then, Abraham brought to fulfillment what Scripture had already declared of him: he believed God. ΠΙΣΤΕΥΩ refers to an intellectual belief brought to perfection through the synergy of faith brought to its maturity or perfection by works (1:22). Using the example of Abraham, who did not simply intellectually “believe” God but put his son on the altar, James concludes in 1:24 that we also can see its place, where Abraham’s justification before God is mentioned; on this matter “for James, no less than for Paul, the words of Gen. 15:6 . . . are decisive. It was by his faith that Abraham was justified.”

His concluding statement, while directly opposed to Luther’s sola fide, is also the only time in the NT that such a phrase πίστεως μίν δεῖ appears. Stein observes, “It is ironic that the specific affirmation ‘justification by faith alone’ does not come from any

641 McCartney, James, 169.
642 Hort, Epistle of St James, 64.
643 Fung, “Justification!”, 155.
644 This and 2:19 are the only two uses of πιστεύον.
645 Proctor, “Faith, Works,” 320-21, observes that “the imperfect συνέργη in v. 22 implies the coexistence of faith and works in Abraham over a long period and not just at the time of the Akedah.”
646 Echoing the “show me” of 2:18.
647 Lodge, “James and Paul,” 205, adds “The true antithesis comes in [1.]25 between a (pleonastic) doer who acts and a hearer who forgets,” a discussion which has set this one up. He reminds that Wis. 7:27 pronounces that Wisdom “passes into holy souls and makes them friends of God (φιλοῦ τοῦ),” as Abraham is here termed (210). Proctor, “Faith, Works,” 323, concurs: “Jewish interpreters understood Abraham’s love for God as the motivating factor behind his obedience, which in turn provided a strong basis for Yahweh’s friendship with him.”
648 Lorenzen, “Faith without Works,” 233, poses the highly anachronistic question at this point, “James is very critical of faith alone and insists that works are necessary for salvation. This raises many problems. Has James departed from the Pauline and Protestant emphasis that salvation comes by faith alone? If this is so, should this have consequences for the canonical status of James?” He “rescues” James, however, by recognizing “first of all that James was not a systematic theologian” and therefore should not be called to task for his failure to acknowledge Paul’s “superior” theology, ultimately calling readers to recognize the pragmatic balance James brings.
statement found in the letters of Paul but rather from James. And James is arguing that justification is not by faith alone.\textsuperscript{649} Because of James’ polemical tone, Jeremias concludes “There can be no doubt that Ja 2\textsuperscript{4} presupposes Paul, for the thesis \textit{ἐκ πιστεὼς μόνου} which James contradicts is no where met in the whole literature of Judaism and of the earliest Christianity except only in Paul.”\textsuperscript{650} Fewer scholars, however, are drawing this conclusion. For example, McCartney argues that “although there are some similarities of phrasing and use of OT texts (particularly Gen. 15:6) that may sound as though James is ‘reacting’ to a perversion of Paul’s notions of justification by faith, those similarities may instead be attributed to the fact that both James and Paul operated in a Hellenistic Jewish environment that was experiencing growing pains resulting from an influx of people from a Gentile background.”\textsuperscript{651} Johnson explains in detail:

The answer to the second question, ‘why does James use language so associated with Paul,’ is more difficult to answer . . . [in] limited space. But the basic point can be stated clearly enough. It is not that discussions of ‘faith and works’ are absent elsewhere in Jewish and Christian literature. . . . It is not that ‘faith and righteousness’ do not occur in combination, for they do, nowhere more impressively than in the Qumran writings. . . . The problem, rather, is that James and Paul bring these elements together in unusual concentration. It, therefore, appears that they are discussing the same topic. In fact, as I tried to show earlier, they are not. They use the same words but in different ways. The direction of James’ argument is different from the direction of Paul’s. But then why is the language so close? The best answer is probably to be found not in a hypothetical power struggle between early Christian leaders, or in a subtle literary polemic, but in the simple fact that both James and Paul were first generation members of a messianic movement that defined itself in terms of the ‘faith of Jesus.’ And because both Paul and James were Jewish and interacted primarily with Palestinian Judaism, they both instinctively turned to Torah for that explication and found—as did the Christian movement generally—the figure Abraham as open to midrashic exploitation. From within their separate concerns, they developed separate midrashic arguments that converge at the semantic level in intriguing (yet obvious) ways, yet diverge at the level of meaning in still more important ways.\textsuperscript{652}

\textsuperscript{649} Stein, “‘Saved by faith’,,” 14.
\textsuperscript{650} Jeremias, “Paul and James,” 368. He continues problematically, “The answer which Christian Judaism, in agreement with the whole of Judaism, considered as self-evident is: Righteousness is obtained by obedience to the will of God. Only he who fulfils the law will be proved by God. Righteousness is \textit{ἐξ ἔργων νομίου}, how could it be obtained otherwise?” This is the sort of conclusion fought by Sanders, \textit{Paul and Judaism}, see esp. 180, 517. In context of James it remains problematic, because James no where says that righteousness is \textit{ἐξ ἔργων νομίου}, and in fact never uses that phrase—Jeremias imported a Pauline phrase into James as an answer to the Pauline difficulty of James’ conclusion that salvation is not \textit{ἐκ πιστεὼς μόνου}!
\textsuperscript{651} McCartney, \textit{James}, 16.
\textsuperscript{652} Johnson, \textit{James}, 249-50.
Essentially Johnson and McCartney argue that a great deal of literature of the time would have automatically looked to Abraham in particular, if not also Rahab,\textsuperscript{653} in order to support their particular exegetical arguments. As Davids argues above, the “works” of Abraham to which James refers are “works are deeds of mercy,\textsuperscript{654}” works which, as James 2:12-13 has already promised, will bring about a merciful judgment: recognition for a living faith.

Jeremias does, however, come to a conclusion that is still largely agreed upon in relation to Paul and James on the necessary works:

The deeds of which James is speaking are the fulfilment of the ‘royal law’ (the law of our king) (2:8), of the ‘perfect law of liberty’ (1:25)—“Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.’ \textdots\text{Ε}ψυ with James means Christian love. Romans 2:8 (justification by faith without the deeds of the law) is speaking of Christian faith and Jewish deeds. James 2:24 (justification by works and not by faith only) is speaking of Jewish faith and Christian deeds.\textsuperscript{655}

Abraham is the prime example to all Israelites that faith entails \textit{faithfulness}, not merely an intellectual acceptance of a proposition.

To the example of Abraham, James adds one final illustration: that of Rahab in 2:25.\textsuperscript{656} He links her to Abraham by the adverb \textupsilon\textomicron\omega\nu\sigma\varsigma, indicating that this model does not necessarily add something new but serves to drive the same point home. As noted above at 2:19, Rahab, the resident of Jericho, proved her faith as distinct from the fear of the people of Jericho by her actions of rescuing the spies. James calls her a prostitute, but “even” (\textkappa\omicron\iota\iota) she was justified—and quite physically saved—through her faithful actions


\textsuperscript{654}Davids, \textit{James}, 127.

\textsuperscript{655}Jeremias, “Paul and James,” 370.

\textsuperscript{656}While James does not mention her faith, Proctor, “Faith, Works,” 328, observes that, “since within the context of Jas. 2:14-26 James only attempts to prove the necessity of good works in addition to faith, his decision to leave out any explicit reference to Rahab’s ‘belief’ is understandable. The necessity of orthodox belief is the implicit assumption of this passage as a whole, and as a result James need not discuss Rahab’s faith explicitly.
that demonstrated her belief in YHWH’s sovereignty, actions that would have placed her very life in danger had they been discovered by the reigning government.  

Ultimately, James summarizes his position on faith once again in 2:26, returning to 2:17 and the uselessness of an idle faith. He concludes with the aphorism that the body and spirit unity is a necessary condition for life. He makes a direct comparison here, giving one last picture to his audience. Again Davids notes, “Works are not an ‘added extra’ any more than breath is an ‘added extra’ to a living body.” While it is possible to have a body without a spirit, it is simply that: a body, inert and useless for life. Likewise one can have a faith without works but it is correspondingly dead and useless for its purpose. Much like the call to righteousness in Wisdom literature or the image from the parable of the sower in Matthew 13, the one who does not bear fruit faces judgment for this failure to show life. McCartney concludes: “that which distinguishes living faith from death faith is works of faith. By no means does any of this suggest that one could create genuine faith by works, any more than an effort at mouth-to-mouth resuscitation could revitalize a corpse.” For James, works are not added (and therefore optional) to faith, they are integral to its very existence. Faith in James, in order to save, must be faithfulness.

**Preliminary Conclusions**

Some very brief conclusions can be drawn from these two theologically-laden chapters. First, the word and the law together form the long-awaited transformative New Covenant, now internalized in those who accept it, shaping an obedient people, the \( \pi \omega \tau \eta \varepsilon \ \lambda \sigma \gamma \omega \nu \). The \( \lambda \varphi \omega \varsigma \) comes freely as a gift from God, initiating the relationship as his firstfruits. As such, obedience is not a matter of doing the right things alone, rather it

---

657 Hanson, “Rahab the Harlot,” 54, notes the contrast between Heb. 11:31 and Jas. 2:25, for “one and the same episode is cited as an example of faith by one author and of works by another,” something he also notes happens with Abraham between the two texts. From this he concludes, “It seems likely that the author of James was trying to correct Hebrews rather than Paul in the matter of the relation of faith to works. The two examples he cites, Abraham’s sacrifice of Isaac and Rahab’s treatment of the spies, are both mentioned in Hebrews, but neither occurs explicitly in Paul” (59).
reveals a renovated character shaped to the will of God. For such a one, there is no need to fear the judgment, for they will by very nature act in the mercy of God. In contrast, the one who fails to act mercifully ought to fear the judgment, for their deeds reveal that they have not received (1:21) the λόγος and are not among the new creation. A living faith is gifted by the λόγος of God, and the one who receives it in humility reveals their reception through a character of mercy. This obedience of πίστις allows the salvific power of the λόγος to come to its fullness and completion (ἐτελείωθη), bringing the person through to a merciful judgment.
CHAPTER 4: BROADENING THE PICTURE IN JAMES 3-5

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

Chapters one and two provide the most crucial passages for this thesis, bringing together all the related themes of the law, works, faith and justice, but a number of passages from the rest of the epistle broaden the picture garnered thus far. This section, therefore, will seek to highlight further developments in the text while remaining focused on James’ key themes.

A. THE WORD AND JUDGMENT

Throughout the later three chapters of James, the text links speech and judgment. James 3:2 offers the only simple use of λόγος in the epistle, referring simply to speech and introducing a section focused on correct speech leading to purity of motive. While control of the tongue and its reflection on the internal state (Jas. 3:2-12) is a consistent concern in both wisdom literature and in James, for the sake of space we shall not explore that section further here. More germane to our discussion is James 3:1 with its warning to teachers. This verse bridges James 2 and its focus on saving faith with chapter three and its discussion of the power of the tongue. In introducing teachers here, James is not strictly concerned with the fact that they teach by speaking. Rather, given the text’s holistic approach to life and faith, James makes a logical connection since teachers would be expected to lead not only with their words but also with their examples. Thus a disparity between the two would be even more reprehensible since they “know the good they ought

660 Cargal, Restoring the Diaspora, 138-39, sees 3:1-4:12 as one discursive unit based on judging, arguing, “He then emphasizes the importance of having this proper attitude [in 4:10] by introducing the theme of judgment of individual believers through the inverted parallelism between teachers who ‘will receive the stricter judgment’ (3:1) and the ‘one Lawgiver and Judge who is able to save and to destroy’ (4:12). This second inverted parallelism underscores a fundamental difference in the perception of the function of teachers between James and his readers. In response to his reminder that there is ‘one Lawgiver and Judge,’ James immediately challenges his readers’ aggrandized self-perception, asking ‘so who are you who judges the neighbor?’ (4:12). They perceive the role of teachers as being to ‘judge’ others, to exercise (punitive?) authority over errant members of the community (‘neighbors’). James, on the other hand, views ‘teachers’ not as the dispensers of (punitive) judgment but as the recipients of ‘stricter judgment.’ . . . We can thus summarize the theme of the discursive unit of Jas 3:1-4:12 as ‘humbling oneself’ in the light of impending judgment.”
to do” (Jas. 4:17). Knowling notes this, saying “Perhaps it may be fairly said that nowhere was the separation of faith and works likely to be more frequent or more offensive than in that arising from vain and empty speech on the part of men who, while claiming to be instructors of the foolish, ‘say and do not.’”

The judgment here is left very ambiguous. It may refer to a harsher judgment by those under the teacher, people who expect them to hold a higher standard. James, however, consistently argues for God as the sole judge, and as such places an eschatological spin onto judgment. Townsend rightly notes a dependence on the teachings of Jesus in this expression, echoes which help to support the divine nature of this judgment: “The spiritual principle behind this may well be that from those to whom much has been entrusted, much will be required (Luke 12.48), though that saying is not directly in view here. Rather more in mind is Jesus’ insistence that we shall be either acquitted or condemned in the final judgement out of our own mouths (Matt. 12.37).

The teacher whose actions fail to match their words condemns him or herself. The passage which follows points to the double nature of the people who cannot control their tongue, bringing them into the category of the διψυχος so condemned in the

---

661 Smith, S. James, 168, disagrees: “It is with a man’s words that he is here concerned, and he is going on to speak at length as to the perils of speech. He is not for the moment concerned with the man’s other conduct.” Johnson, James, 255, notes the difficulty with the English word “judgment” here: “the precise meaning of kríma here is difficult. Does it mean (so Laws, 144) that they are to be judged by a higher standard (compare Epictetus, Discourses II, 15, 8; Rom 5:16), or does it mean (so Ropes, 226; Dibelius, 182) that they will be punished more severely (see Rom 2:2; 3:8; 1 Cor 11:34; 2 Pet 2:3)? The English ‘judgment’ allows both construals . . . for the idea that teachers receive a harsher sentence, see the condemnation of the Scribes by Jesus in Mar 12:38-40.”

662 Knowling, The Epistle of St. James, 68. So also Ropes, Epistle of St. James, 227, who says, “μείζον κρίμα, ‘greater condemnation’, cf. Mk. 1255 (Lk. 2057) οὕτοι λήψονται περισσότερον κρίμα, Rom. 135. The teacher’s condemnation (or, as we should say, his responsibility) is greater than that of others because having, or professing to have, clear and full knowledge of duty, he is the more bound to obey it, cf. Lk. 1247 f.”

663 Smith, S. James, 168, notes both these options, but opts for the latter: “Throughout his Epistle S. James views all things in the light of Doomsday, and the supreme Judge is the only Judge he fears. In consequence it were better to translate τό μείζον κρίμα as the greater or heavier condemnation, because the words refer to the sentence of God, and not to the opinions of men.”

664 Townsend, James, 57. James B. Adamson, The Epistle of James (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1976), 141, sees the same Matt. text in the background: “Greater responsibility brings greater judgment. If every idle word will be weighed at the Judgment (Matt. 12:36f.), how much more the utterances of the teacher? We may be tempted to think the diatribe on the tongue approaches too near to exaggeration; but it goes no further than James’s deep feelings for his vocation would justify. Any attempt, therefore, to emend or to evade its plain meaning is not only inappr appro priate here but also ruinous to the passage, as a whole, on the tongue.”
introduction.\textsuperscript{665} Moo notes that κρίμα “usually refers to the negative outcome of judgment, for example, ‘condemnation,’ in the NT,”\textsuperscript{666} but Laws concludes with the majority that “it seems unlikely that James would hold out to all teachers, and indeed himself, only the prospect of greater or lesser punishment, but rather that of particularly rigorous scrutiny at the final judgment (cf. 1 Cor. iii. 10-15).”\textsuperscript{667} Arguably, James foresaw a very real risk of unfavorable judgment to teachers who either failed to match their actions to their teaching (contra 1:22-25; ch. 2) or failed to teach accurately and were themselves δίψυχος. He leaves it uncertain whether this condemnation occurs at the final judgment, but presumably if one’s words and teaching consistently fail to match, the possibility is open. At the very least, this statement is no harsher than Jesus’ in Matthew 12:36-37.

A little further on, James 4:11-12 gives an intricate warning against judging others, placing the role of judging firmly in God’s hands:

\begin{quote}
Μὴ καταλαλεῖτε ἀλλήλων, ἀδελφοί. ὁ καταλαλῶν ἀδελφὸν ἢ κρίνων τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ καταλαλεῖ νόμου καὶ κρίνει νόμου· εἶ δὲ νόμον κρίνεις, οὐκ ἔχει ποιητὴς νόμου ἀλλὰ κριτής. εἰς ἑστὶν ὁ νοµοθετής καὶ κριτής ὁ δυνάμενος σώσαι καὶ ἀπολέσαι· σὺ δὲ τίς εἰ ὁ κρίνων τὸν πλησιον;
\end{quote}

Do not slander one another, brothers/sisters. For whoever slanders his brother slanders the law and judges the law. But if you judge the law, you are not doers of the law but judges. There is One Lawgiver and Judge who is able to save and destroy. But who are you who judges your neighbor?

This passage again links the tongue to judgment. Here, speaking against another believer is shown to be a far greater sin of pride against God than one might realize. This follows from a section (4:4-10) in which the audience is entreated to repent from prideful ways of acting and humble themselves before God with mourning. The warnings of 4:11-12 follow

\textsuperscript{665} Moo, James, 149-50, sees the danger to occur in the teacher’s use of speech: “But the logic of James’s argument, as we follow it into v. 2, suggests a third interpretation of the ‘greater judgment’: teachers, because their ministry involves speech, the hardest of all parts of the body to control, expose themselves to greater danger of judgment. Their constant use of the tongue means they can sin very easily, leading others astray at the same time” (cf. the warnings of Matt. 18:6, Mk. 9:42; Lk. 17:2). So also Martin, James, 108, and Davids, James, 137, wherein the latter notes: “it must have been a common teaching that teachers would be held to a stricter standard. . . . And that is only right in that the teacher has the possibility of greater damage and claims to have a more perfect understanding of doctrine and ethics.”

\textsuperscript{666} Moo, James, 149.

\textsuperscript{667} Laws, The Epistle of James, 144.
logically, covering an area of their lives that most likely was both a widespread problem and too common to be noticed.

These verses have four of the six uses of κρίνειν in the epistle, as well as two of the four uses of κρίτης. It begins with the idea of slandering another, but that leads quickly to James’ bigger concern: the one who slanders feels superior not just to the other person but to the law itself, thus approaching a rivalry with God himself.\(^668\) The crucial point for James here is the identity of who has the right to judge. By gossiping, his audience has claimed that right. By judging one another, they in truth judge the law which places all humans on a level below God.\(^669\) And this returns them to James’ concern that they be ποιητής νόμου, subject and obedient to the law of God in humility (cf. 1:22-25; 3:13).

James’ concern then focuses on God’s role as the only lawgiver and judge. Because God gave the law, he is the only one with the right to judge whether it has been fulfilled appropriately. In a theologically loaded statement of God’s role that echoes his creedal statement of 2:19, James affirms both the unity of God and the roles of God, intimating that his audience have forgotten both in their pride. God’s unity means that he alone is the one who can fulfill both roles of lawgiver and of judge, and ties both roles into him alone.

Laws defends this relationship, noting “The order of the sentence, lit. one there is, serves to stress again the oneness of God (cf. ii. 19); here he is one as having the sole title of the functions of law-giver and judge, and thus uniting them.”\(^670\) This divine judge has the

\(^668\) Ibid., 187, notes “To set oneself over against another in this way is to break the law of love, and this in turn must be seen as implicitly taking up a critical attitude toward the law itself, for not to keep it is to judges it to be invalid or unnecessary. The transgressor thus puts himself into the position of being not a doer of the law but a judge. The phrase [doer of the law] would in classical Greek denote a law maker rather than one who obeys the law, cf. on i. 22. James may be conscious of this other meaning, when he describes God as the ‘lawmaker’ in v. 12: God and man are ‘doers of the law’ in different ways, and man must not take on himself the role that is God’s; only God is above the law.”

\(^669\) Johnson, James, 293, observes the link back to the discrimination of 2:1-4 and with Jesus’ teaching regarding reciprocal judgment: “What is most pertinent for James is that such judgment is a form of arrogance. . . , in which one asserts superiority over another. In effect, we find here the hidden form of the same sort of discrimination described in 2:1-4. James’ language here and in 5:9 recalls the sayings of Jesus in Matt 7:1.”

\(^670\) Laws, The Epistle of James, 188, agrees: “That God is judge is a biblical commonplace . . .; that he is the law-giver is a basic assumption of the Pentateuch and expressed in the Sinai tradition. . . The noun nomothetes
ability σώσαι καὶ ἀπολέσαι,671 and James’ rhetorical question at the end, “who are you?” warns that pride in slandering a fellow believer could actually lead to destruction by the true Judge.672 Gossip is no mere matter between people but an act of pride that can lead to a person’s eschatological destruction. Verse 12 moves from the realm of the “here and now” to the divine courts, and thus the destruction here is far more than physical death—it is the opposition to σώσαι and at the hands of the one Judge. James appears to warn that final judgment comes to the one who slanders a fellow believer in pride.673

Finally, in James 5:9-12, one last warning is issued concerning the link between speech and sin. He admonishes:

Do not grumble, brothers/sisters, against one another, lest you be judged. Behold, the judge is standing outside the door. Take as an example of suffering and endurance the prophets who spoke in the name of the Lord. Indeed we call blessed those who endured. Heed the patience of Job and see the purpose of the Lord, the Lord who is full of compassion and mercy. But above all, my brothers/sisters, do not swear either on heaven or the earth or any other oath. But let your yes be yes and your no be no, lest you fall under judgment.

This passage gives indication of James’ sense both of the imminence of judgment as well as his indebtedness to the teaching of Jesus. Here James returns to the themes of

used to express this is used in the LXX only in Ps. ix. 21, though God is described in a participial phrase as ho nomotheto in Ps. lxxxiii. 7.

671 Kistemaker, Epistle of James, 145, observes, “the significance of the aorist tense in these two active infinitives lies in the finality of God’s verdict on the day of judgment.”

672 Wiard Popkes, “The Mission of James in His Time,” in The Brother of Jesus: James the Just and His Mission, ed. Bruce Chilton and Jacob Neusner (Louisville: WJK, 2001), 93, warns of James’ concern of spiritual arrogance: “The church has to face judgment as well; it would be a fatal error to indulge in a premature feeling of being saved. This is exactly the key which also Matthew strikes against a church which forgets ‘to bring forth fruit’ (Matt. 21:33-41).”

673 Penner, James and Eschatology, 180-81, justifies an eschatological reading of this text as well as the subsequent ones: “the theme of eschatological judgment and reversal ties 4.6-5.12 together into a unified section centering on the imminent judgment of the wicked and the hope of the righteous. It is evident that the writer has an eschatological event in view, and that this undergirds the structure of 4.6-5.12. The eschatological reversal is anticipated, so the writer exhorts the believers into submission and humility, and condemns and denounces the rich and proud, announcing the imminent judgment which awaits them. The unit is then concluded with further admonition to the community in light of the impending judgment. Jas 4.6-5.12 is thus formed within an explicit eschatological horizon.”
endurance in suffering and controlling one’s tongue, tying the two themes from chapter 1 more closely together than he has at any point yet in his epistle and linking both to his concern that the audience pass through judgment without fault. He has already reminded his audience of the Lord’s parousia in verse 7, and, as he continues on, he turns to the other side of the perspective of imminence: the nearness of judgment. He clearly marks his return to addressing fellow believers, though, through the repetition of ἀδελφοῖ in verses 7, 9, 10, and 12, an emphasis warranted after the fiery denunciation of 5:1-6.

First, James warns his audience against grumbling against one another, ἵνα μὴ κρίθητε. The problem of complaining against another believer is a specific misuse of speech James reiterates from 4:11-12. This particular sin of speech reaps harsh consequences, perhaps based again on the principle of 4:11-12 and the equation of judging another with judging the law and thus usurping God’s place.674 This warning is compounded by the intimidating statement, ἰδοὺ ὁ κριτὴς πρὸ τῶν θυρῶν ἐστηκεν.675 This, together with 2:12 and 5:1-6, impresses upon the readers that judgment could happen at any moment. The perfect ἐστηκεν reveals that the judge is already there and able to hear their complaints, that he could enter at any point and hold them to account for their wicked speech. In contrast, James calls them to emulate the prophets or Job—both of whom ironically were noted for speaking out—whom James uses as examples of

---

674 Kistemaker, *Epistle of James*, 166.
675 Sawicki, “Person or Practice?,” 388-90, notes several different interpretations for this statement, including the very practical position that there could be eavesdroppers who are spying on behalf of the established government: “Living in an oral-aural culture, this community might be wary of surveillance. Grumbling (στενοχωρία) is audible and would attract the attention of anyone who happened to be snooping around. . . . On this interpretation the ‘judge at the doors’ of v. 9 would be present not physically but virtually through his agent, the informant.” She also offers the interpretation of the imminence of a divine judge, but opts in the end for an echo of Hebrew imagery of doors and judgment occurring at the city gates. Johnson, *James*, 317, notes the intertextual allusions within the NT itself pointing to the imminence of eschatological judgment: “The noun ἄφωνa means simply a door or gate, with the plural form (as here) having the equivalent meaning. . . . There is an obvious sense in which being ‘at the gate’ suggests proximity (see Acts 5:9; 12:6). The image here, however, strongly resembles that in the eschatological discourse in Mark 13:28-29. . . . Note the combination of harvest (θερισμική), being near (ἐγκατέστασις), and door/gate (ἄφωνa). The saying is repeated virtually verbatim in Matt 24:32-33, whereas Luke omits the wordplay. . . . The play of θερισμική/ἄφωνa in Mark 13:28-29 is found here also (θερισμικήτατα, 5:4; ἄφωνα, 5:9) in combination with the specifically Christian language concerning the parousia tou kyriou and its location as ‘near’ (ἐγκατέστασις). Such a clustering makes it difficult not to see (as in Acts 10:42; 2 Tim 4:8) the krites (‘judge’) as Jesus (so Muzzner, 205; Marty, 195), although James’ usage in 4:12 again makes that conclusion a cautious one.”
correct speech: the prophets who spoke denunciation only at the word of the Lord and
Job who complained directly to God but who endured his sufferings so that in the end
God honored and rewarded him.

Indeed, the witness of Job bearing through undeserved miseries leads James to
comment on the evident nature of God: πολύπλαγχνος ἐστιν ὁ κύριος καὶ
οἰκτίρμων. Although James describes God/Christ as ὁ κριτής, he then also affirms
God’s nature of mercy toward those who endure.676 This reality of God’s mercy supports
the injunctions of all of 5:7-11, wherein “the good result accomplished by the Lord reveals
his attributes of compassion and mercy.”677 The audience is encouraged to show the same
sort of endurance as Job so that they also might see God’s character revealed to them in
the same way.678

James may have created the term πολύπλαγχνος, but it bears close relation to
the highly freighted term πολυέλεος (Ex. 34:6; Num. 14:18; Neh. 9:17; Psa. 86
[LXX85]:5, 15; 103[LXX 102]:8; 145 [LXX144]:8; Joel 2:13; Jonah 4:2; 3Mac. 6:9; Ode.
12:7), the latter used only in contexts of God’s character and paired with descriptions of
him as slow to anger, long-suffering, loving towards his people and longing for them to
return to him, but also paired with statements of his justice and judgment upon
unrepentant sinners.679 James, in his presentation of God’s character parallels the former
category and appears to draw on the tradition of God’s self-identification both as just to
sinners and as merciful to the repentant. Having warned his audience of the imminence of
the judge, James moves to remind them of the judge’s covenantal character of mercy.

676 The verb μακροθυμεῖω appears three times in James, solely in this larger passage: twice in 5:7 and once in
5:8, tying to the injunction in 5:10 to endure like the prophets, there using the noun μακροθυμία. Even
though he has varied from the term υπομονή that he used consistently in chapter 1, the theme of endurance
remains.
677 Johnson, James, 321.
678 Sawicki, “Person or Practice?,” 399-400, comments: “Judgment is the opposite of patience, it seems.
Judgment does not produce justice: patience produces justice. Or rather, patience waits and gives God time
to work. . . . Patience holds out against closure, while judgment settles things.”
679 Although he does not connect it with πολυέλεος, Johnson, James, 321, notes the use of
πολύπλαγχνος by the Shepherd of Hermas. Where πολυέλεος appears only in the LXX, never in the
NT, πολύπλαγχνος has not appeared before James.
God’s merciful character, however, does not lessen the audience’s need to strive for holiness. In verse 12, James makes his most direct allusion to the teaching of Jesus (Matt. 5:33-37) but adds the warning ἵνα μὴ ὑπὸ κρίσιν πέσητε. Whereas Jesus does not directly warn of judgment for oaths (but cf. Matt. 12:36-37), he does call anything beyond straight speech as ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ, a reality which James may be improvising upon as he warns of the imminence of judgment for those who misuse speech. As in 3:1, James presents a direct link between inappropriate uses of speech and divine judgment. Here, the language of “falling into” judgment leads one to hear this as eschatological judgment. Thus failure of honest speech puts one into God’s judgment and away from God’s mercy.

The quick flips between God’s nature as judge and as merciful in James 5:5-12 are consistent with James’ overall theology that wrongful living brings one into judgment and humble endurance is rewarded by mercy. Two sins of speech are threatened by judgment, but these frame the model of the endurance of Job, endurance that revealed God’s character as merciful. James clearly seeks to encourage his audience away from a natural complaining, angry response to hardship toward one that looks to God to see what τὸ τέλος κυρίου might be.

B. FAITH AND PRAYER

A smaller intersection occurs between faith and prayer, first hinted at in 4:1-11 and expanded in 5:13-18. In the former, faith is not explicitly mentioned, but this passage gives the clearest expression to friendship and loyalty language in the text. The shocking warning of 4:4 in the context of their failed prayers: μοιχαλίδες, οὐκ οἴδατε ὅτι ἡ φιλία τοῦ κόσμου ἔχθρα τοῦ θεοῦ ἐστίν; ὃς ἔαν οὖν βουλήθη φίλος εἶναι τοῦ κόσμου, ἐχθρὸς τοῦ θεοῦ καθίσταται, places two options before the reader. Clearly

680 Deppe, Saying of Jesus, 134-49, discusses the probability of both Matthew and James citing a verbum Christi and concludes that James “preserves the more original character of the saying than Matthew” (147).
their prayers fail here because they fall into the category of friends with the world. The language of adultery here, anticipating the second use διψυχος in 4:8, sets prayer into a context of a faithful commitment to God alone. Those who have sold their affection to the κόσμος and its values are called to a humble, wholehearted repentance, forsaking the path of sin and doublemindedness. Faithfulness in the relationship with the divine is crucial for favorable response from God in prayer and judgment (4:11).

James 5:13-18, a section on confession and sickness, adds to our understanding of God’s relation to his people and their sins. In a turn from what might be expected, in 5:15-16 James promises forgiveness before commanding confession, a promise that may well serve as impetus for confession. Knowing that God is merciful (5:11) and that he will forgive (5:15), confession becomes not a groveling in fear of judgment but an opportunity to return to the mercy of God. The communal nature of prayer, confession, and forgiveness, however, must also be noted. It appears that God works through the community praying and confession, yet again revealing the collective ethos in James.

James 5:15 with its promise, ἡ εὐχὴ τῆς πίστεως σώσει τὸν κάμνοντα καὶ ἐγερεῖ αὐτὸν ὁ Κύριος, leads to the question of the best translation for “faith” and “save” here. Throughout the first two chapters, πίστις appeared to move in the direction of “faithfulness,” or perhaps more precisely, the inability of a faith not demonstrated in faithfulness to bring a person through judgment (“save”) in the eschaton. Perhaps most relevant, however, is a return to the initial discussion of praying in faith in 1:5-8, wherein faith refers to a steadfast confidence in God’s character as generous and the one who gives what his people need. The prayer τῆς πίστεως here, then, cannot refer to a presumption

In this passage, Sawicki, “Person or Practice?,” 400, makes an intriguing observation of the characters James includes: “These two examples, Elijah and Job, emphasize the merciful and non-final quality of even the most severe divine action. They also suggest that the patience of human beings can affect the mode of divine action. When human beings are patient, God can be merciful. Or it might just as well be said: when human beings are merciful, God can be patient.”
on God’s methods, but a steadfast confidence in his nature as \( \text{τὸν διδόντος} \ \text{θεόν} \) (1:5), likewise confident that he is the God who hears the cries of his people (5:4). Moreover, the expression \( \text{ἡ εὐχὴ τῆς πίστεως} \) parallels the \( \text{δέησις} \ \text{δικαιού} \) of 5:16, urging at least an overtone of faithfulness in the interpretation of \( \text{πίστις} \).\(^{682}\)

Mußner points to the difficulty of the three future tense verbs, \( \text{σώσει}, \ \text{ἔγερει}, \ \text{ἀφεθήσεται} \), for determining whether 5:15 promises present healing or a future saving.\(^{683}\)

On the one hand, throughout the rest of the epistle \( \text{σώζω} \) refers to eschatological salvation (1:21; 2:14; 4:12; 5:20). In contrast, Martin leans toward a present “healing” interpretation,\(^{684}\) but Johnson points to a parallel with the language of “faith saving” in Mark and Matthew, commenting that, “especially when combined with ‘faith,’ \( \text{σώζω} \) tends to mean ‘saved’ in a religious sense.”\(^{685}\) Johnson thus emphasizes the “polyvalence” of James’ language, such that the “saving” and “raising up” of 5:15 could intend either present or eschatological result. The link with Jesus’ expression \( \text{ἡ πίστις σου σέσωκέν} \ \text{σε} \) (Matt. 9:22), points to the integration of spiritual and physical healing that Jesus worked. Jesus did heal physical problems, but his intention was a holistic healing that included the forgiveness of sins, reinstatement in community, and ultimately, restoration of the divine-human relationship. Likewise here James most likely intends physical healing as the outcome of prayer, but he is not limited to that.

Finally, this restoration can be seen in the last two verses of the epistles. James concludes with the elusive statement (5:19-20):

\[ 'Αδέλφοι μου, εάν τις ἐν ὑμῖν πλανηθῇ ἀπὸ τῆς ἀληθείας καὶ ἐπιστρέψῃ τις αὐτὸν, γινωσκέτω ὅτι ὁ ἐπιστρέψας ἀμαρτωλὸν ἐκ πλάνης ὀδὸν αὐτοῦ σώσει ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ ἐκ βανάτου καὶ καλύψει πλήθος ἁμαρτιῶν. \]

\(^{682}\) It is worth noting what I have not seen suggested anywhere else: embedded in the Elijah story James alludes to in 5:17-18, namely 1 Kings 17-18, is the story of Elijah raising the dead boy in 1 Kings 17:17-24, which perfectly fits this context of prayer for healing.
\(^{683}\) Mußner, Der Jakobusbrief, 221.
\(^{684}\) Martin, James, 217.
\(^{685}\) Johnson, James, 332.
My brothers/sisters, if any of you wanders from the truth and someone should turn them, know that the one turning the wanderer from their path saves their soul from death and covers a multitude of sins.

If the community is responsible for praying with and confessing to one another, in concluding the epistle, verses 19-20 reveal how essential it is to James that the members of his audience watch for one another as well. Πλανηθῆ parallels the use of the same verb in 1:16, again concerning people being deceived or willingly wandering from the truth they know. These people, as in the context in chapter 1, contrast with the divine character that does not waver, a parallel that can also be seen from the other figurative use of ὄδος in 1:8. The role of the believer in this situation is turn the straying one back into the path of truth. In so doing, someone is saved, whether the believer or the one straying is not entirely clear.

The expression, however, καλύψει πλήθος ἁμαρτιῶν is of particular interest. This expression traces back to Proverbs (10:12; 17:9) wherein “covering” refers to a person’s willing forgiveness of another’s offenses rather than stirring up strife. Because of his consistent concern of the effects of an unruly tongue on community, James may well have had this voluntary silence in mind. One advantage of this interpretation is that it allows for a human agent, which is what the sentence gives us (ο ἐπιστρέφας). The difficulty, however, is that the statement of saving a soul lies between the subject and the expression of covering, something a human agent cannot fully do. So there may well be a divine agent hidden within James’ thought, a potential example of divine mercy.

---

686 Townsend, James, 110, notes the willfulness involved in the straying, commenting, “The idea of straying rather implies an element of absent-mindedness, as with lost sheep. But it is stronger and more deliberate than that; there is an element of deliberate apostasy involved. The writer may have in mind those who found it difficult to hold on to their Christian discipleship in the teeth of some of the persecutions envisaged elsewhere in the epistle, but more likely he is thinking of those who fall by the wayside in a moral or practical sense. They are said to stray from the truth, but given the context of this writing it is extremely unlikely that James is implying that they have given way to false doctrine.”

687 Kistemaker, Epistle of James, 184, argues, “This last statement of this verse ought not to be taken literally, for man is unable to cover sin. Scripture teaches that not man but God has the authority to forgive. The expression covers over implicitly refers to God’s act of forgiving sin.”

688 Witherington, Letters and Homilies, 549, sees the intertextual echo as Ps. 32:1-2; 85:2, wherein God is the agent, and concludes “if we take seriously the intertextual echo, it seems likely that the one whose sins are
Following the discussion of physical healing and repentance in 5:13-16, the “saving” done here may be a physical salvation from a life of sin that could lead to death (cf. particularly vv. 15-16). Its position in the final verse of the book, however, lends itself toward a reference to eschatological salvation, particularly since the only other reference to θάνατος in James comes in 1:15 as the final result of sin. With the possible exception of 5:15, which we have argued is ambiguous, in James both death and salvation are eschatological terms, a reality this final warning emphasizes. The whole epistle concludes with this reminder that faithfulness to the path of truth is necessary for a person’s final salvation, and encourages the community to continually encourage each other in this reality.

C. Purity from the Κόσμος

Darian Lockett’s Purity and Worldview in the Epistle of James argues very well for the importance of the issue of purity in James, arguing that “purity is a necessary, yet not sufficient, condition in order to achieve perfection.” This purity is in specific reference to the taint τοῦ Κόσμου (1:27), the worldly view that corrupts the individual and leads them down the path of temptation and death (1:13-16). This theme, which might also be described at times as faithfulness to the path of humility also appears throughout the rest of the epistle.

For instance, the “wisdom” section of James 3:13-18 highlights the need for purity in one’s deeds. This section bears a marked resemblance to 2:14-26. Again, the possession of something—here, wisdom—is questioned and the only adequate response is “show me.” Verse 13 has the final use of ἐργον in the epistle, again tying this passage to the earlier discussion of faith and works. Like faith, wisdom does not exist apart from the deeds that express it. Indeed, the only way to tell between these two ways is by the sorts of covered by such an act is the one who is the agent of conversion. Thus the final clause means something like “this act covers a multitude of sins,” and James probably has in mind the eschatological tribunal when such mercy will be shown.”

Lockett, Purity and Worldview, 143-44.
deeds they inspire. While wisdom should be revealed by τῆς καλῆς ἀναστροφῆς τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ, the alternative is ζήλον πικρῶν, ἐριθείαν, or φαύλον πράγμα. Also bringing echoes of earlier passages is the brief expression ἐν πραύτητι. One of the distinguishing marks of a wise person is the humility of their actions, which contrasts strongly with the pride and infighting of the unwise. The foolish know only to fight for worldly position and power, creating chaos and instability rather than the simplicity of way that God seeks from his people. The way a person lives reveals whether they are wise or filled by an anti-wisdom that is ἐπίγειος, ψυχική, δαιμονιώδης (3:15, everything in contrast to ἀνωθεν, 3:17). The person who lives that way is condemned as deceiving themselves—again a deception that most likely has eschatological implications. One cannot live according to the wisdom of the world and yet consider oneself righteous.

The list of 3:17, in contrast and reminiscent of Paul’s lists of spiritual gifts,690 gives us clear insight into the “works” that are expected of the wise person—the person of true faith. James starts the list with the term ἁγνή, which many suspect is more than simply an accident of order.691 This term functions as the capsule for the other terms, such that Ropes can conclude that ἁγνή is “the quality from which they all proceed.”692

Ultimately the goal of this wisdom is a person τοῖς ποιοῦσιν εἰρήνην. In an interesting parallel, people in James are urged to be ποιηταὶ λόγου, (1:22), ποιητὴς ἔργου (1:25), and ποιητὴς νόμου (4:11): here the concern is to be “doing peace.” Throughout the epistle, the verb ποιέω and the noun ποιητής appear 16 times, a concerted effort from the author to motivate his audience to correct living. The diversity of referents—word, deeds, peace, the law—reveals a rich picture of obedience. In this passage, the foolish person produces πᾶν φαύλον πράγμα while the wise one will

---

691 Davids, James, 154; Martin, James, 133; Wall, Community of the Wise, 188; Ropes, Epistle of St. James, 250; Johnson, James, 274.
692 Ropes, Epistle of St. James, 249.
produce καρπῶν ἀγαθῶν and καρπὸς δὲ δικαιοσύνης. Quite literally, the fruit reveals the source (cf. 3:12), and a tainted source is by definition not pure and does not lead to the harvest that God rewards (cf. 3:10-12).

Likewise, 4:1-10 continues the contrast of tainted worship versus pure faithfulness. In this passage, the amount of language showing conflict and impurity is overwhelming: ἐκ τῶν ἡδονῶν ὑμῶν τῶν στρατευόμενων (4:1); κακῶς αἰτεῖσθε, ἵνα ἐν τοῖς ἡδοναῖς ὑμῶν δαπανήσητε (4:3); μοιχαλίδες (4:4); ἁμαρτωλοί, δίψυχοι (4:8). In contrast stand the ideas of friendship that cannot share allegiances and the need for repentance and humility from the sin of conflicted loyalties. The warning of 4:4 states this focus most starkly: μοιχαλίδες, οὐκ οἴδατε ὅτι ἡ φιλία τοῦ κόσμου ἔχθρα τοῦ θεοῦ ἐστὶν; ὥς ἔαν οὖν βουλήθη φίλος εἶναι τοῦ κόσμου, ἔχθρος τοῦ θεοῦ καθίσταται.

Lockett summarizes the danger here, warning:

To be a friend of the world is to live in harmony with the values and logic of the world in the context of James 4.1-10, namely envy, rivalry, competition, and murder. Friendship language is the language of alliance or coalition and here in 4.4 those allying themselves with ‘the world’ are labeled ‘adulteresses’, or those unfaithful to covenant relationship. These references to ‘the world’ in James refer to something more than the material world or humanity in general; it is the entire cultural value system or world order which is hostile toward what James frames as the divine value system.693

The OT/covenantal language here is unmistakable (cf. Isa. 57; Jer. 9:2; 23:10; Hosea). The question surfaces, however, whether the repentance called for is ritual or moral. For instance, Painter warns that “This easy separation of the moral and ritual elements in the law is nowhere suggested by the letter of James and is not supported by evidence from the first century. Indeed there was no characteristic linguistic distinction to describe ritual and moral elements of the law.”694 He argues from the purity language in 1:27 but also the language in 4:8 of washing (καθαρίσατε) and cleansing (ἀγνίσατε). Gruenwald agrees with Painter, stating

---

693 Lockett, Purity and Worldview, 144.
that “James appears to place a greater emphasis on the doing of rituals than Paul
does,” finding that on the whole James supports a Jewish-looking Christianity.695
James 4:8 makes clear, however, that the purifying imagery is of an internal
transformation from being sinners and doubleminded.696 Although James echoes
ritual language, he uses it to import the weight of unfaithfulness into his discussion
and thus set up his call to repentance. From 1:21 onward, he has used this language
of cleansing for a changing of one’s moral condition.

Ultimately, the concern here is that the audience repent from their
misguided allegiances. As Johnson states, “The central religious polarity in James is
between the ‘wisdom from above’ that leads humans into ‘friendship with God’
and the ‘wisdom from below’ that manifests itself in a ‘friendship with the world’
that is also enmity with God (3:13-16, 4:4). All human activity . . . is defined in
terms of these two allegiances.”697 The purity of God’s wisdom stands in contrast
to the doubleminded nature of those who love the κόσμος. This passage also
echoes James’ earlier description of Abraham as φίλος θεοῦ ἐκλήθη (2:23).
Abraham’s faithfulness stands in stark contrast to those who vie for position and
pray greedily (4:1-4), and helps further illumine the defining nature of friendship for
the reader.

While 4:13-17 continues to reveal one instance of unconscious lapsing into the
world’s view, James 5:1-6 is perhaps the ultimate example of the rules of the κόσμος.

695 Ithamar Gruenwald, “Ritualizing Death,” 468. His defense of this statement is rather weak: “This
impression derives from the fact that Paul engages in long theological discourses, as James does not” (468).
Gruenwald also notes that many commentators desire to smooth over the differences between James and
Paul regarding the law (469). Johnson, Brother of Jesus, 8-9, however, argues, “James does not connect nomos to
any form of ritual observance,” and that “nomos in the Letter of James encompasses a set of moral rather
than ritual norms established by divine authority and providing the basis for God’s judgment of human
actions. It focuses on the love of neighbor, and explicates that love through specific attitudes and actions
prescribed by Torah. The law also provides narrative examples for imitation, models of faith in several
dimensions.” Thus, both sides claim James’ silence for their own support.
696 Seitz, “James and the Law,” 481-82 does a careful study of the purity language found in James as
compared to the LXX and does not find any convincing parallels of overtly ritualistic or cultic language.
697 Johnson, James, 265.
Addressed to οἱ πλούσιοι, this passage appears as a “woe oracle” against the wealthy who fail to practice concern for the poor. In many ways it more closely parallels prophetic diatribes than wisdom texts, but texts like Sirach 5:1-8 or the Epistle of Enoch 103:9-104:6 also show the frustration wisdom texts have with the arrogance of the wealthy who fail to care for those under them.698 Here as there, problems are revealed in the failure to obey Levitical laws of fair payment of wages and thereby to practice neighbor love. This passage appears to address its condemnation toward a group outside the congregation, possibly to comfort the poor who suffered under the oppression of these rich but also serving as a warning to those within the congregation against emulating or even admiring the rich merely because they have money and status.699

The rich are warned to weep over their coming ταλαιπωρίας, a command in which James echoes and yet overtures the initial command from 1:10 to boast in their ταπεινώθει.700 The language here is of the eschatological judgment, with inanimate objects witnessing against the landowners and the incorruptible shown to be corrupted because of the incorrect use to which it has been put.701 Both the greedily-held wages and the oppressed workers cry out against them for vengeance from God,702 and his designation of God as the κύριος σαβαὼθ who hears the cries of the helpless reveals the danger in which the avaricious stand. Phrases such as καὶ φάγεται τὰς σάρκας ῥμῶν

698 VanLandingham, Judgment & Justification, 99, notes the similarity to the Enochic tradition, wherein “the sinners have not violated rules specific to the Enochic community, but rather have committed transgressions condemned in the Hebrew Bible. In this case [1 Es. 98:9-10] the sin described pertains to the wealthy who increase their wealth through oppression and exploitation and then flaunt their wealth by wearing expensive clothing and jewelry.”

699 Witherington, Letters and Homilies, 526.

700 Everyone will experience the state of ταπεινώς, it is merely a question of whether it is done willingly (through humility before God) or enforced by God at judgment, see, Kamell, “Economics of Humility,” 157-75. Johnson, James, 299, observes that “the noun form used here (tauliporia) can be used of miseries in general, such as those connected to poverty or mockery . . . but it is used predominantly in connection with the miseries suffered by those who have resisted God (Pss 13:3; 139:6; Hos 9:6; Amos 3:10; 5:9; Mic 2:4; Joel 1:15; Hab 1:3; Zeph 1:15; Isa 16:4; 47:11; 59:7; 60:18; Jer 4:20; 6:7).”

701 This passage may well be James’ expansion of Jesus’ teaching in Matt. 6:19-20 on the correct place to store treasures.

702 Mayor, St. James, 146, notes that “the withholding of wages is one of the four sins which are said to cry to heaven,” and it is a sin repeatedly condemned throughout the Hebrew texts as bringing physical death to the one so deprived and divine judgment to the one depriving (cf. Lev. 19:13; Deut. 24:14-15; Jer. 22:13; Mal. 3:5; Tob 4:14; Sir. 34:27).
Finally, one more charge is laid at their door, that of having “condemned” and “murdered” τον δικαιον, revealing their complete opposition to the way of God.704

One question follows: if these πλούσιοι would not count themselves as followers of Jesus, what exactly does this passage add to one’s understanding of themes of salvation? James makes evident yet again that something of God’s final judgment does rest upon a person’s deeds. If a person fails to care for those who are dependent upon them, choosing instead to live for their own pleasures, they fall into danger of ultimate judgment. Additionally, whether they claim to be followers of Jesus or not, James designates them only by their title as πλούσιοι and their actions of greed. Their religious affiliation counts for naught in the light of their failure in mercy. In keeping with passages like Proverbs 21:13, Sirach 6:7-8 and 35:16-26, the Epistle of Enoch, Matthew 25:31-46, or Luke 6:24-26, judgment is swift and merciless for those whose greed has led them to ignore the plight of the needy and live solely for their own pleasures.705 Those who, in proud defiance, define themselves as πλούσιοι fail to exhibit the humility necessary of “those loving him” and thus find themselves excluded from the kingdom by their own choices.

703 Maynard-Reid, Poverty and Wealth, 96, notes both the prophetic ties as well as those with 1 Enoch 94:6-99:15: “But even more significant is the judgment upon the rich being called ‘a day of slaughter.’ This manner of speaking recalls the prophetic prediction of carnage and war and slaughter which would be inflicted upon the nations or Jerusalem. The apocalyptic threat of judgment upon the rich in James recalls even more strikingly the intertestamental apocalyptic ideas. One cannot fail to observe the striking resemblance in language and thought between James and Ethiopian Enoch.”

704 This may be a faint echo of Matthew 12:7. The Pharisees misguidedly condemned (κατεδικάσατε) those with Jesus (who were τους ἄνωτος), bringing themselves into danger of eschatological condemnation. While ἄνωτος is not an exact match with δικαιος, the connection of ideas—failure to understand mercy leading to wrongful condemnation—is also in play in this text. Here, in the failure of the rich to care for those under them, they fall into the same trap, against which James levels one last condemnation.

705 This leaves the question of the identity of the δικαιον and the purpose of their lack of resistance. Cargal, Restoring the Diaspora, 185, sees this person’s lack of resistance, along with “the ‘miseries coming upon them,’ for the purpose of bringing them to repentance, and not simply to bring punitive judgment upon them.” In contrast, Witherington, Letters and Homilies, 530, fn. 426, notes the commonality of the view that this “righteous one” was Christ in the church fathers, and adds that such a connection “suggests that Christ was seen as a divine figure, to whom is applied the Yom Yahweh traditions about the coming judge” (532), a suggestion that would indicate that the time had passed for repentance and instead the time for judgment had arrived.
Preliminary Conclusions

Briefly then, we can see how the themes of judgment and faithfulness in particular weave through the rest of the text of James. The threat of judgment is a powerful motivator for a person to watch their speech, actions and loyalties. Where the first two chapters contrast ἔλεος and κρίσις, having established the opposition, the rest of the epistle picks up the language salvation, most notably in 4:12 (ὁ δυνάμενος σώσαι καὶ ἀπολέσαι). Salvation may be the goal (5:20), but to achieve it one must attain mercy in judgment, which requires a faithful, humble obedience, pure in its dedication to God. Those who reveal in their lives that they value the world’s priorities more than God’s (particularly 5:1-6), can anticipate nothing but judgment and its corresponding condemnation.
CONCLUSION

GENERAL CONCLUSIONS AND CAUTIONS

The contribution of this study traces the development of thought across wisdom literature to James regarding the relationship of humanity to God’s judgment. The diachronic approach used here allowed for development within the traditions, whether in audience or goal, and for recognition of the modifications introduced in the Jesus tradition. Whereas James scholarship has neglected developing a coherent Jacobean soteriology, this thesis answers that absence through examining both God’s character as the merciful judge and humanity’s call to the virtuous life as empowered by the implanted word.

This emphasis on moral character subtly reorients the questions asked of James, for it gives the “faith and works” dilemma a new focus. Within the holistic paradigm explored here, “works” are the outcome of a character shaped by the implanted new covenant, a “word” given by God’s grace that, when rightly received, shapes the entire disposition of a person into one of mercy and obedience. Echoing a long tradition teaching the need to show mercy in order to receive mercy, James incorporates Jesus’ emphasis on the temporal priority of grace as shown in stories such as the sower (Matt. 13) or the two debtors (Matt. 18). Because of the re-creative power in the λόγος, disciples are now empowered to live according to the merciful nature of God, shaping their communities in paths of peace.706 Those who persist in judgment, anger, or pride reveal that their hearts have been untouched by the λόγος, a failure that will lead to their downfall at the time of judgment.

Lisa Sowle Cahill, “Christian Character, Biblical Community, and Human Values,” in Character and Scripture: Moral Formation, Community, and Biblical Interpretation, ed. William P. Brown (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 2002), 16-17, argues for a Christian ethic amidst plurality of interpretation: “Jesus takes familiar cultural and religious values and, without introducing any unheard of moral value or norm, rearranges virtues into a new pattern, so that love, mercy, and justice are at the very center of righteous existence under God. . . . What is profoundly original about Christian ethics and about Christian understandings of moral character is the claim that, in and through Jesus, disciples are really empowered to exist in this way.”
One result of the developmental nature of this thesis is to free the epistle of James from a works-based theology wherein people must earn salvation through enough good works. Across all the literature, a commitment to developing a character in line with God’s own is evident, emulating the God who in Deuteronomy 10 describes himself as “the LORD your God [who] is God of gods and Lord of lords, the great God, mighty and awesome, who is not partial and takes no bribe, who executes justice for the orphan and the widow, and who loves the strangers, providing them food and clothing” (vv. 17-18). The text continues in Deuteronomy 10:19, “You shall also,” and instructs hearers in the character they should develop: one both just and merciful, caring for the helpless and refusing to favor the wealthy. These commands continue through all of the varied emphases in the wisdom literature, with the additional concern regarding careless speech, pointing disciples to obedience in character, not simply to accumulation of deeds.

This study also challenged some of the underlying paradigms that, consciously or unconsciously, often drive NT studies. In some James scholarship one finds the assumption that a particular reading of Galatians 2:16, “a person is justified not by the works of the law but through faith in Jesus Christ,” is the grid through which all other texts ought to be interpreted. James fails this framework.707 A commitment to such a specific reading of Paul’s theology often entails neglect of prior Hebrew literature and encounters difficulty with such NT texts as Matthew 25, all of which encourage a more robust understanding of “faith” and “justification.”708

707 See again the discussion of James and Paul in the introduction. Neusner, “Sin, Repentance, Atonement,” 432, turns things around: “From the perspective of the Rabbinic and the Jacobean constructions, the focus of Paul’s thinking on the issues of sin, repentance, atonement, resurrection and judgment is quite awry. At issue for Paul is the matter of faith versus works, to which all else is subordinated.”

708 Ortland, “Justified by Faith,” 333, warns, “The snag is that our Protestant ears have been so deeply trained to understand human actions—especially when it emerges in the context of δικαιοσύνη—to be set in antithesis to faith. Yet the contrast of Rom 2:13 is not human action and faith but human action and hearing. It is the ποιηταί rather than the δικασταί—not the ποιηταί rather than the πιστευόντες—who are justified,” a contrast identical to the one James builds in 1:22-25. He concludes that “obedience [in Paul] is not merely evidential but is rather built into the very fabric of salvation itself” (338).
Likewise, overemphases on power struggles between early Christian communities leads to premature conclusions that different theologies presented in the NT are contradictory and historically one “lost.”

This forces the reader to assume that there were at least two developing tracks of theology in the NT period, tracks that were hostile towards each other—rather than considering the option that theology does not require only one perspective, neither then nor now.

Confronted with forced false dichotomies, other scholars move to unnatural harmonizations of the texts, whereby all texts actually say the same thing if examined long enough. In such readings, diversity is lost under the weight of ensuring that the textual witnesses all teach the same thing despite differences in terminology or sense. Again, this often leads to choosing a certain reading of Paul.

In contrast, by tracing a path of development across a range of wisdom literature, this study seeks to avoid creating unnecessary conflicts across different contexts and evade conflating diverse witnesses into a single voice. The goal has been to show varied material within a single genre; material James inherited and shaped to communicate his message that all of life should demonstrate humility and obedience once one has come into contact with the good God. And for James, an unchanged life indicates a person who, because of pride, has failed to receive God’s redemptive word. Bauckham summarizes this chain of action:

The God of James, as of Jesus, is preeminently the giving, generous (1:5, 17-18; 4:6), merciful, and compassionate one (2:13; 5:11). From the conviction that God is the generous giver of all good gifts comes the expectation, shared with Jesus, that those who ask will receive, provided they ask in faith, not with divided loyalties and self-seeking motives (1:5-7; 4:2-3; 5:15-18; cf. Matt. 7:7-11; 21:21-22; Mark 11:22-24; Luke 11:9-13). . . . That God’s mercy will be shown in showing

---

709 E.g., McKnight, “Parting in the Ways,” 83-129; Hartin, Spirituality of Perfection, 3; Viviano, “La Loi Parfaite,” 213-26; Sawicki, “Person or Practice?” , 385.

710 Markus Bockmuehl, “Antioch and James the Just,” in James the Just and Christian Origins, ed. Bruce Chilton and Craig A. Evans (Leiden: Brill, 1999), 189, warns, “Nothing in Luke or Paul suggest that James had fundamental theological or soteriological disagreements with Paul, or that his mission was anti-Pauline in intent. . . . At the same time, there were clearly genuine halakhic differences between James and Paul.” Bockmuehl distinguishes that, despite “halakhic differences,” Paul and James sublimated those in favor of “one gospel” (191).

mercy to those who themselves have shown mercy to others (2:13), a principle already found in Jewish wisdom tradition (Sir. 28:1-4; Prov. 17:5 LXX), is especially characteristic of Jesus’ teaching (Matt. 5:7; 6:12, 14-15; 18:23-35; Mark 11:25). Put otherwise, from the abundant mercy of God flows the abundant mercy shown by his people (3:17), especially to the needy (1:27; 2:13-16), and from the generous giving of God comes the generous giving of God’s people to those in need (2:13-16). God’s judgment is not to be imitated (4:12; cf. Matt. 7:1-5), but his mercy and generosity are.712

Bauckham notes both the familiar lessons across the literature and highlights the breadth of James’ theology. He rightly develops the notion that the mercy and generosity of God’s people originate from God’s own mercy and generosity, but he does not develop the implications of judgment for failure, implications that can lead to a quagmire of works-based salvation theology. Therefore while affirming Bauckham’s summary, this thesis also explores the consistent threat of judgment across the literature for those who fail to live righteously.

**SUMMARY OF THE THEMES**

1. **The Word and The Law**

This first pairing is at the background of James’ theology. Because of the importance of the λόγος in redeeming (1:18) and the requirement for obedience to the λόγος/νόμος in 1:22-25 and again in 2:11-13, as well as the potential Pauline conflict regarding views of the law, these terms should not be assumed as straightforward, whether the Gospel or the Mosaic Law. James’ use is subtle: this word/law redeems, instructs, frees, and judges.

Nearly all of these aspects can be seen across the literature. In Proverbs, the hearer is repeatedly instructed to “guard” the words and teachings of the instructor, where the terms for “words,” “instruction,” “law,” and “commandments” appear almost interchangeably.713 Instruction is to be taken to heart, internalized into the person’s very

---

712 Bauckham, “James and Jesus,” 129, emphasis mine.

713 There has been a growing trend toward seeing Proverbs as encouraging Torah-obedience, such that Whybray, *Proverbs*, 103, can tentatively speak of a “convergence of wisdom and Deuteronomistic teaching,” a trend overstated in Bullock, “Wisdom,” 5-18. This move away from a non-covenantal perspective may have implications for witnessing a trend of encouraging Torah-obedience (or simply covenant-obedience) across the literature.
character. In Sirach, the Torah is central as the revealed will of God, the gift of God’s wisdom to his people, enabling them to live in a manner pleasing to God. As with Proverbs, the ritual aspects of the law are largely untouched, the focus is on the character of obedience. Wisdom develops the creative side of God’s λόγος, God’s agent in creation—thereby opening the likelihood that wisdom is also his agent for re-creation and redemption. With its focus on ἡ τολμὴ τῆς ὁμολογίας, 4QInstruction develops the reality that God’s will cannot be known apart from committed study and obedience, worked out within the community. The later texts focus on the λόγος, the Epistle of Enoch and Pseudo-Phocylides avoiding the term νόμος altogether. In contrast, 4 Maccabees celebrates the very rationality of complete obedience to the entirety of the Mosaic Torah, the first text where we have the whole of the Torah as a clear referent.

Together, then, a development in the wisdom texts can be traced as they teach obedience to their content. Whether it is the instructions of the teacher (Prov., 4QInstruction, Ps-Phoc.), of Lady Wisdom (Sir., Wisd.), or the Torah proper (4Macc.), the trend is towards the acknowledgment of the divinely given nature of the revelation, revelation that requires obedience, which indicates that it has been heard and accepted.

Those who do not control their tongues are fools. Those who do not show mercy to the poor and oppressed can expect no mercy. The teachings of wisdom require the corresponding actions.

Matthew shifts the referents for both λόγος and νόμος with his presentation of Jesus. No longer do the “words” refer to any instructor’s teaching: Jesus’ λόγοι hold an authority that shocks even his initial audience. Matthew places nearly every use of νόμος in Jesus’ mouth, so that he defines the scope and direction of the law for his hearers—broadening and deepening it until it is no longer a legal code but a code of ethics, a description of the character of the righteous person.

211
With these texts as background, then, James’ λόγος/νόμος conjunction is unsurprising. He is committed to the unity of the law because of the unity of the lawgiver. Likewise, his creative λόγος (1:18) readily derives from an entire tradition of the creative word of God forming and shaping his people. While his λόγος finds its realization in the prophecies of the New Covenant fulfilled in Christ’s blood, James’ redemptive λόγος refers not only to the death and resurrection but also to the entirety of the λόγοι and life of Jesus. The word and law find their fulfillment in Christ but their breadth of meaning, the joy in them, and the absolute inseparability of instruction from obedience, comes from a long tradition of rejoicing in the law of God (best seen in Ps. 119).

2. Faith and Works

This pairing flows readily from the previous one, for if the λόγος requires hearing and doing, ἔργα develops the content of obedience, the life of πίστις. The terms πίστις and ἔργα develop in tandem, particularly in James 2:14-26, wherein the whole point of the argument is to ascertain whether a workless faith has any saving power. In the larger context of properly receiving the redemptive word—a reception concretely realized in obedience to the word and law—πίστις and ἔργα rightly belong together. Faith without works (2:14-26), like hearing without doing (1:22-25), is an exercise in self-deception.

This type of understanding occurs throughout the literature, developing from the “fear of the Lord” in Proverbs to the theological inquiry into the Law in 4 Maccabees. The literature consistently compares the “righteous” with the “others” (e.g., fools, wicked) who do not practice faithful obedience. In Proverbs, faithfulness is the central concern, while intellectual belief remains nearly unobserved. The path of the wise is marked by obedience, careful ethical behavior, while the path of the fools wanders and strays into every available

714 Regarding a continuing ambiguity, Cahill, “Christian Character,” 10, observes, “In a framework of character ethics in which ‘character’ indicates a process of communal formation of individual identity, the Bible does not necessarily have to produce specific moral rules in order to be authoritative. Rather, it orients Christian persons and communities around general values, principles, or virtues that reflect God’s self-disclosure in Christ. Central among these are, for example, repentance, love of neighbor, self-sacrifice, cross-bearing, forgiveness, nonviolence (closer to a moral rule), and compassion.”
temptation; the righteous display humility while the wicked boast in their ways. Proverbs emphasizes moral and ethical imperatives in daily life—caring for the poor, guarding one’s tongue, avoiding laziness or other sins, or simply shunning temptation—over legal regulations. It is in the daily acts of life that the covenant is worked out.

Sirach emphasizes the correctness of its teaching in contrast to more apocalyptic wisdom, focusing on the Torah as God’s revelation through wisdom. As with Proverbs, fidelity to Sirach’s teaching reveals the righteous person. Indeed, then, πιστίς functions as a covenant term, signifying faithfulness and obedience. In such a paradigm, “works” serve as an example of faithfulness, not an additional requirement (e.g., Sir. 51:30). In contrast, Wisdom offers a more theologically nuanced understanding of faith, now focused on the reasonable nature of faith in Israel’s God. While the terminology of faith is minimally used, the condemnation of idolatry reveals a theological commitment to a specific form of monotheism. Faithfulness marks the elect, those whose deeds bear fruit that is readily seen. Outside the traditional concern for the poor and for controlling one’s speech, the specific works of the faithful are not heavily outlined except for the sin of idolatry—perhaps for Wisdom the most nearly unforgivable sin in which humanity engages. Faith in (the true) God leads to faithfulness and to life; idolatry prevents one from finding God and thus ends in futility and death.

In 4QInstruction are to be found the most specific instructions regarding the “works” of the faithful, teaching them from the perspective of poverty. Far from indicating a blessed state as in Proverbs, wealth now most indicates a sinner while the audience of the righteous draws from the poor. The faithful are instructed on everything from marriage and oaths to humility. “Faith,” however, is underemphasized in favor of dedicated study of the הַיָּהֹן הַיָּהֹן, which teaches its student the ethics of humility and poverty. The Epistle of Enoch encourages its audience to have faith in God’s justice.

715 Lindsay, Josephus and Faith, 46.
despite contrary evidence, continually repainting the scene of judgment where the righteous—the faithful—will be vindicated while the wicked are judged, tormented, and cast aside. Thus, the Epistle encourages faithfulness in hardships and endurance in trials, counting on future justification at the time of judgment. Fourth Maccabees determinedly points to God’s vindication of the faithful as reason to remain faithful. The passions are to be kept under strict control, temptation is to be endured, and strict obedience to the Torah to be maintained, trusting that the God of Israel’s forefathers still controls history. Pseudo-Phocylides continues 4 Maccabees’ emphasis on moderation, even as it returns to a Proverbs-like practicality of deeds.

These same concerns continue in Matthew. Faith is revealed by faithfulness, in works that reveal belief. Repeatedly emphasizing that a “tree is known by its fruit,” Matthew draws a firm line between those who bear fruit and those who do not, the latter being destined for destruction. Matthew emphasizes the development of a righteous character—that while no particular quantity of fruit is required, bearing fruit is necessary. Ultimately, the faithful recognize Jesus and appropriately respond to his λόγοι. Repeatedly, Jesus points to mercy and forgiveness as the crucial disposition of the faithful.

James follows in this line. He lays emphasis on wisdom ἔργα such as controlled speech and endurance in temptation and draws a connection between faith and faithfulness, but also shows the faithful as characterized by mercy and humility. “Faith” can be intellectual assent (2:19), but in order to save it must bear fruit. The wealthy are judged because they have oppressed the poor, the businessmen rebuked for pride, the oppressed reproved for grumbling, while the merciful are offered hope, the peacemakers a fruitful harvest, and the humble a kingdom. Endurance “works” toward the desired goal of perfection, and the epistle concludes with the call to bring back those who “wander” from the correct path.
3. Judgment and Mercy

These themes flow naturally from the prior ones, as conclusions of the patterns already set out. James urges obedience to the word, because that is how reception of the word is judged. Faith without works, like hearing without action, remains nothing more than self-deception that cannot save at the time of judgment. Most crucially, mercy and judgment function as the two sides of justice: the merciful “doers” obtain ἔλεος, while the merciless “hearers” receive κρίσις. James 2:12-13 abridges all of the epistle’s teaching regarding soteriology into short aphorisms that also concisely summarize the literary history surveyed here.

Proverbs provides the “simplest” understanding of these terms: while its text urges mercy to the oppressed, God’s judgment or mercy is worked out within the span of a person’s life. As people live, so will they be rewarded or punished. This ethical paradigm is followed by Pseduo-Phocylides. Sirach acknowledges that the simple paradigm does not always work: the righteous often live lives of poverty while the wicked prosper, so it solves this injustice by assuring the reader that God will execute justice at least at death, so the unrighteous will have painful deaths while the righteous will die in peace. Here again a major indication of the righteous is their character of mercy, especially as revealed in almsgiving, but a repentant heart is also required.

The Wisdom of Solomon moves in a different direction, adding the dimension of immortality thereby increasing the scope for justice to be enacted. The righteous, even those who seemed to fall under judgment through dying young, receive God’s mercy in eternal life while the wicked disappear, destroyed by their own choices. God is initially merciful to all humanity, but at judgment only the merciful attain immortality from God. We find that 4QInstruction affirms God’s initial mercy in sustaining creation, but develops further the notion that everyone will be judged. The elect—the righteous who obey the teaching in 4QInstruction—are promised God’s mercy at the time of final judgment, while
the others—the wicked—have worked their own judgment. In this vein, the Epistle of Enoch opposes God’s protective “salvation” with his “judgment” of the wicked at the time he enacts his justice. These categories are clear, based simply on the life a person has lived; character determines outcome. In 4 Maccabees endurance in faithfulness becomes the pivotal virtue by which eternal life is won, but also the propitiatory work of faithfulness points to a mercy that encompasses faithful Israel, not simply the hope of a single individual.

In Matthew, Jesus repeatedly emphasizes the human requirement for human mercy, a disposition shaped by forgiveness. Regardless of the generosity of God’s original mercy, if the recipient does not then act in mercy, that one will not be judged among the righteous. Matthew’s picture is complex and involves a variety of aspects such as controlled speech and obedience to the instruction, but ultimately it returns to the two categories of the righteous and the wicked, groups distinguished by their fruit.

James’ soteriology thus fits within a well-developed trajectory wherein people’s character as revealed in their “works” determines their categorization as righteous or wicked. Although James’ use of the term “works” may have been unfortunate in light of later theological developments, his conclusion that the word must bear fruit in order for salvation to be possible has significant biblical precedent. This does not lead to a “legalistic” obedience, as James quite clearly states that it is the “implanted word” that δυνάμενον σῶσαι τὰς ψυχὰς ὑμῶν. For the word to be effective, it must be received in obedience; otherwise it simply is a cause for judgment as self-deception. Those who wander from its ways stray from the unchanging God. God’s mercy is generous at the time of justice, responding to the merciful in triumph and returning to the merciless only their own measure.
CONCLUDING JAMES’ SOTERIOLOGY

A Jacobean theology as explored in this thesis, therefore, presents a coherent picture. From God’s initial grace in implanting the new covenant and thereby creating a restored creature able to fulfill God’s will, through to a justice tempered by mercy, James says little that is entirely original in this diachronic reading. Shaped by Jesus’ teaching, however, James emphasizes both the gift of the original λόγος and reasonably requires that the seed produce fruit. God, the unchangingly good and merciful Judge, gives to his people the saving word and therefore shows only his justice when he executes judgment on those who reject his νόμον τελείτε βασιλικόν. Far from a question of “getting in” or “staying in,” God wills for an entirely renewed character, a disposition shaped in his image, inclined to mercy and purity. James never answers queries such as “how much” or “how many times,” stating merely that “faith works.” Moral character—a character shaped by God and not a tally of deeds—allows mercy to triumph.
BIBLIOGRAPHY


Burns, John A. “James, the Wisdom of Jesus.” CTR 1 (1986): 113-35.


Davila, James. “(How) Can We Tell if a Greek Apocryphon or Pseudepigraphon has been Translated from Hebrew or Aramaic?” *JSP* 15 (2005): 3-61.


Murphy, Catherine M. Wealth in the Dead Sea Scrolls and the Qumran Community. STDJ 40. Leiden: Brill, 2002.


________. *Paul, the Law, and the Jewish People.* Minneapolis: Fortress, 1983.


248


